

A SPANISH GRAMMAR,
first collected and published by *Richard Perciuale*
Gent. Now augmented and increased with the decli-
ning of all the Irregular and hard verbes in that toong, with
diuers other elpeciall Rules and necessarie Notes for all
such as shall be desirous to attaine the per-
fection of the Spanish
tongue.

Done by **JOHN MINSHEU**
Professor of Languages in London.

Hereunto for the yoong beginners learning and ease, are
annexed Speeches, Phrases, and Prouerbes, expounded out of
diuers Authors, setting downe the line and the leafe where in
the same booke *they shall finde them, where by they*
may not onely vnderstand them, but by
them vnderstand others, and
the rest as they shall
meete with
them.

Virescit vulnere Virtus.



Imprinted at London, by
Edm. Bollifant.

1599

TO THE RIGHT WORSHIP-
FVLL GENTLEMEN STVDENTS OF
Grayes Inne health and happines, and to the
affected to languages there, daily encrease
with perfect accomplishment of the
most commendable qualities.



Vcius a famous Roman meeting on a time with the Emperor Marcus, asked him whither he went: who answered, I am going to Sextus, vt discam quod nondum scio, that I may learne that which I doe not yet know. Diogenes the philosopher went to Athens to Antisthenes to learne of him somewhat that he was ignorant of; but Antisthenes not willing to impart at that time any of his doctrine, repulsed him: the other left not off his purpose, but more and more importuned him in such sort, that Antisthenes taking vp a staffe to drive him away, Diogenes stretched out his necke, willing him to strike on hardly, for he should not finde a staffe so hard, that could drive him from him so long as he might learne any matter by him woorthe the hearing. I speake this Gentlemen, meaning none of you to be bound by their example, seeing one was an Emperor and might doe what he list, and the other a Cinick philosopher that would doe that he ought: therefore if a man haue any learning or qualitie, let him bring it to you, and if it be too tedious unto you, or hinder your sport, rather then be troubled with him, bob him or flout and scoffe him away. Be not imitators of Demosthenes which spent more oyle in the lampe in studying to enrich his minde, then wine to comfort his bodie; but rather waste your wine and spare your candles: neither be so foolish as Cleanthes the philosopher, that drew water in the night, that he might follow his studie in the day; rather take your ease in the night and your pleasure in the day, because Mutantur tempora & nos mutamur in illis. Yet Gentlemen, if you doe but set before your eies these famous men, which haue beeene and are of the house you now remaine in, (the names of some few I can now recite) as Sir Nicholas Bacon Lord Keeper, Lord Burleigh Lord Treasurer, Sir Walter Mildmay and Sir Francis Walsingham, learned Fitzherbert Lord chiefe Justice of the common
i 2
pleas

To the Gentlemen students of

pleas which abridged the law, and Sir William Stanford, which wrote the pleas of the crowne, Sergeant Yelerton, Sergeant Daniell, Sergeant Spurling, Master Brograuer, Master Stanhop, Master Hesquit, Master Anthonie and Master Francis Bacon, with duers others might well moue you to consider that, Qui veult plus qu'vn autre valoir, doibt plus qu'vn autre scavoir: He that will be esteemed aboue another man, must haue more knowledge then another man: And Meglio esser mendicante che ignorant, Better to bee a begger then barren of good letters. But these letters are painefully purchased, why Petit ardua virtus; Difficilis virtutis via; Difficilia quae pulchra: Therefore Pythagoras counsell'd his familiar friendes that they shoulde choose out the best kinde of life, although the mest difficult: and Salust saith, deckings pertaine to women, and trauels belong to men: and Seneca affirmeth, that base is that honor which is gotten with idlenes, which the Roman pollicie when it flourished confirmed by an auncient lawe duly kept, that every father that had children of the age of tenne yeeres should become suretie for them, that they shoulde not live idle, or commit any excesse, which was so neerely looked unto, that they publikely chastised Cato the Censor's sonne for a saucines committed, and banished a brother of good old Cina for living idlic among them. None durst presume to go into the streeses but hee carried some token in his bande what kinde of life or studie hee followed, which if in these times it were in force, how many streeete walkers woulde retire themselves to some vertuous studies. But me thinke I haue some saie, Ars longa & vita brevis, I answere them with the Thebane Philosopher, which in the 75. Olympiade, came to the solemne sports kept about the citie Olympia in honor of Jupiter, who had made all the apparell he ware with his owne hands: his shooes he had sowen his shirt he had wounen, &c. being demanded where he had learned so manie mens arts, answerved, In the beginning there was but one arte at all, & that the sloth of men had caused that one to be diuided into many, and how euerie particular man with diligence and labour might obtaine to the knowledge of that that all men in general had knowledge of. To this purpose Pythagoras said, He that knoweth not what he ought to know, is a brute beast among men: He that knoweth no more then he hath need of, is a man among brute beasts: He that knoweth al that may be knownen, is a God among men. So many examples present themselves, that rather time would faile them matter herein, & for that my cause standeth now rather to demand remedie and not giue counsell, or to giue thankes for good turnes received, and not prescribe precepts, I thinke good briefly and plainly to shew unto you how hauing founde my selfe beholding to some of you, whom I had read unto in the toongs, I thought nothing could better agree with my profession as to shew my gratafull minde towards you, then by labouring for your ease, in these instructions of the Spanish toong: which if they be thankefully received, I shall thinke my labour well imployed. Yet before I coulde make an ende of this and the Dictionarie, I did as Robertus Stephanus saith of himselfe in gathering together his Dictionaries called Thesaurus linguae Græcae & Latinæ; I haue made Thesaurum, that is, a Treasure for others, but thereby haue made my selfe a bagger, whereof of some of the right vertuous and woortbie gentlemen of that your house, (to whom I am most beholding, and therefore stande most in affection bounde) understanding,

languages in Grayes Inne.

derstanding, wished me to goe forewarde in so good a woorke, and not to giue our for some wants: which then of themselves they supplied, whose good kindnes if I forger, I wish the law of Draco, (which was to punish with death, if there were any found so unthankfull as not to requite a good turne, or at least to forbear to acknowledge his benefactors for the same) might be inflicted on me: for there can be no greater injurie offered to a freeminde, then to bee reputed ingratefull: although in these daies fower as great evills left unpunished as those that are punished, Vntemperatenes, Vnshamefastnes, Vnfaithfulnes, and Vnthankefulnes. But to begin with my benefactors in this worke in order as they began with mee in Grays Inne, first Master William Willoughby, a gentleman as vertuouslie minded and of as good carriage as the rest: next Master Henrie Bing, whose excellent learning placed together with such gentlemanlike condicions, makes him beloued among the Elders, and honored among the younger sort: after him Master Frances Barneham, and Master Iames Hewes, endued with exceeding good wits, and no lesse good natures: I may not forget the good woorths of Master Robert Hill, and Master Cheeke, gentlemen well studis in the most commendable kindes of learning: Master Daulson of excellent learning, wit and vertues: Master Helmes and Master Gill both for their good parts better knowne then I can haere set downe: Master Thomas Mason, and Master John Roberts, adorned with ornaments of languages, to their oþer learning and vertues: Master Archer as he is well read in language, so is he a good fauourer of learning: The rest of the well accomplit yoong gentlemen whom I know not, I saie of them as my minde is towards them best: Gentlemen, if for these praises you shall aye plaine on another, I pray you cast all on mee, for I protest none of them euer knewe that I

ment to write unto them, much lesse put any of their names in

print. Thus wishing to you as much as Cicero

writing to his friend Atticus, would limite to

be wished to his dearest friends, viz. To

enjoy health, to possesse honor, and

neuer to suffer want,

I rest:

At your command

JOHN MINSHEU,

To the Reader.

It be vanitie and vexation of minde, for a man to toile in this life to gather riches togither, when he knowes not whether he be wise or foolish that shall enjoy it: we may thinke the sweate of our spirits and the toile of our bodies, to be altogether vaine, which write or print, when we cannot tell whether they will prooue sober or frantike, to whom we leauie the possession of our trauelles. But the Spaniard saith, *Quién de miédo se murió de cagazónes le hizieron la sepultura*; and because as the Italian saying is, *A molti puzzza l'ambro*, Amber is accounted stinking by many: and *Dal asino non ne hai che calzi & petti*: I am resolued for this once to puton merchants eares, to heare with patience euerie mans speech and dispraiisings of his wares, because *Quot homines, tot sententiae*, So many men, so many mindes. Therefore he that I should leauie off any good worke for any mans ill speech, may well be likened to that poore seely fellow, which on a time went with one of his sonnes with his Asse before him to the wood, to fetch him a loade thereof for his wife and children, and meeting trauellers by the way; some misliking with him that he should goe on foote, and let his Asse goe leere; others, that he roade himselfe, and suffered his childe to goe a foote; others, that he loaded the poore Asse with two persons, being scarce able to carrie himselfe; others, when he left his sonne alone riding and himselfe go on foote; in such sort that the countrey fellow could not tel what to do, seeing do what he could, still he found reprehenders: whereupon he would goe no further forward, but returned sad home to his houise without wood, where he remained for feare of fault finders, till he and his houishold were neere starued with colde, till at last finding his owne simplicitie, he returned to the wood, and to as many as he met by the way, he said; *Hee that passeth for other mens speeches and repreffes, endureth colde and a thousand greeves*; and he that will throw a stome at euerie dog, shall haue a wearie arme: but I hope, *Qui bien ferá, bien aurá*, And for all the dogs barking, the moone will stand where it did. And I say to the malitious, *Mets ta main sovent en ton sein, et tue me dirás de ton prochain*. And let them remember, that *Chi fa quello che non deve, gli avien quel che non crede*, According to a Historie I haue read of an Emperour, who had his brothers sonne for his cupbearer: The Emperours steward and vncle, for enuie perswaded the cupbearer that his breath did stinke, and wifched therefore to turne his face from the Emperour when he deliuered the cup till remedie were found: forthwith he told the Emperour, that his cupbearer had defamed him to all his court, by saying his breath did stinke; and to know it for a certaintie, he likewise told him how he should see the cupbearer turne away his face from him when he came neere him; whereupon the Emperour conceiued such wrath against him, (as the saying is, the anger of a Prince the messenger of death) that

To the Reader.

that he sent expresse commaund to his burners of bricke, that they should burne that man that came vnto them first the next morrow; and likewise commaunded his cupbearer to be there so earely that none might be before him: on the morrow morning verie earely the cupbearer going, and passing by a church in the way went in and fell into such a sound sleepe, that it was the after noone before he could awake: The steward in the meane time to see the euent of the cupbearer, went and was burned himselfe aliue. The cupbearer at his retурne signified to the Emperour what had happened, and also was desirous to knowe of the Emperour why he should send him thither, &c. If neither Histories nor reason perswade them, they must needs be answered with silence, and so gentle Reader I rest silent from troubling thee or them herewith any longer, more grieved at my mishap and disabilitie, then wanting good will or liking to doe thee seruice.

*Hec raptim,
Vale.*

John Minshew.

In opus M. Minsheui edendum,
Iohannis Keperi generosi
ēasixi.

*Qui cupis auriferi contingere flumen fberi
Vocibus & veris noscere gentis opes,
Vel mores, vel quas exercet Iberia merces,
Hesperiam & totam noscere quisquis aues:
Minshæum legit, lectum (mibi crede) probabis,
Ingenium, genium, munera, verba, fidem:
Qui totidem subiit noctesque diésque labores,
Et flores veluti sedula carpsit apes;
Qui tibi qui patriæ, se se sumptumque dicauit,
Edidit, & tantæ sedulitatis opus,
Aut lauda, aut saltem noli mordere, latrando
Zoile, tabificus, ne videare, canis.*

Soneto de un capitán Español
del Autor.

De un diamantino muro circuydo
Con puertas de metal y penetrable;
Y por guarda un dragón fiero espartable,
Era el huerto de Atlante defendido:
Mas siendo del fuerte Ercules vencido,
Fue abierta la puerta yncontraítable,
Y las pomas de precio ynestimable
Gozaron luego quantos han querido,
Vos Mincheu soys el Ercules famoso,
Que a pesar de la ynbidia (dragon fiero)
Abristes puerta al huerto ameno umbroso,
De la yspanica lengua, que primero
Cerrada estubo al yngles curioso,
Do gozara pomas de oro verdadero.



The Proeme.



Parish is a speech, whereof in times past (in Spaine) there hath beeene sower kinds used: The first and ancientest is the Biskeine, which was the speech of the province of Biskay and Nauarre: it hath his originall most ancient.

Power sorts of
Spanis.
1. Biskeine toong
from the Caldean toong, as the learned in them both
drawen from
affirme, to whome it plainly appeereth that this is of
greatest antiquitie.

2. Arabique toong in olde
of Granado, and in parte in the kingdome of Andaluzia, Valencia, and Aragon, and was the Arabique, whose originall is the Hebrewe almost among them quite worne out, yet to this date they keepe the pronunciation of some of their letters still, as Ç, G, J, X, Z.

3. Catalan lan toong was called Prouençal: and the Italians confesse that the Prouençals were the first inventors of their rimes and verses, which are so much prised in Italie where Petraque, Boccace, and Dante, give some testimonie in retaining their wordes in manie places.

4. The Spanish lan toong haue such difference in certaine wordes and pronunciations, that it may well be called a language by it selfe, enen as the English and Scottish, yet in truthe, it is not so seuered, but that they springe from one fountaine, and haue one gall toong.

This Lengua vulgár or Spanish toong draweth his originall from the Latine or Romaine, and because the Romaine conquerours were most politicke in prouiding for the continuance of their estates & language to their posteritie, by planting where they woone, * Colonies and garrisons; as also not permitting any stranger to where people are sent to dwell: or people to inhabit such place: the priuiledge of their laves or freedome of their townes, to buie, sell, or traffique, but in the Romaine or Latinetoong, as in Spaine they haue done: Therefore the Spanish retaineth still to this date so much of the Latine toong. And by reason of the Incursion and ouerrunning of so many strange nations, as the Africans inhabiting about Carthage, called Carthaginians, Gothes, Huns, and Vandals, by the Spanish which ceased not till they had ouerrunne the most part of Europe, yet so setled nijh keepeth much of the themselves in Andaluzia in Spaine, that they called it by their owne name Vanduzia or Vandalia of Vandalles, as also Africans inhabiting Mauritanie called Moores, whose first comming in, proceeded from the licentious li-

The Proeme.

Howe the
Moores first en-
flouring a ladie called Cava the daughter of earle Julian, one of his nobles.
By meanes heeroef, this language remaineth so altered and changed from his
owne first propertie and nature, admitting wordes, accents, and pronunciations of
other strange nations, as it is become a language of it selfe compounded of the Latine
and aboue named tonges: but yet so, that it hath much more of the Latine then
of all the other, whereby it may be called the Latine tong altered or corrupted.

Chro. of Spaine.

For Spanish wordes comming from the Latine, marke the table heere following
and their like.

Spanish wordes drawnen from the Moorish tong begin much with Al, as Al-
cúza, a vessell for oyle: Alfidél, or Alfilér, a pin: Almúd, a measure, a pecke: Al-
guarísono, Arithmetiche: Almoháda, a pillow, &c. or in ç, as çaherír, to upbraid,
çahónda, a hogfie: or souinde on r, or x, Almaráxa, an ewer of glasse: Xabón
soape: Almoradúx, marjoram: Arredíar, to drine away: Arré尔de, fower pounde
wright, &c. also in z, as Zagál, a shepheard. And at this day the Moores in spe-
aking Spanish for júro a Dios, I sweare by God, they saie jureux a Deux: for Hom-
bre, they say Homber, for Vuestra mercéd, your worship or mastership, they saie
Voxár mérxe.

Generall

General Observations from the Latine for the framing of the SPANISH.

3

Charitas,	Caridád.
Maiestas,	Mageftád.
Cruelitas,	Crueldád.
Chitaz,	Ciudad.
Fidelitas,	Fedelidád.
Securitas,	Seguridád.
Obfcuritas,	Escuridád.
Conformatas,	Conformidád.
Calamitas,	Calamidád.
Vilenias, &c.	Voluntád.
In Spanish thus,	
Plena,	Lleno.
Plana,	Llano.
Plana,	Lluvia.
Plaga,	Llaga.
Plorare.	Llorar.
In Spanish,	
Facere,	Hazér.
Faba,	Háva.
Fax,	Héz.
Falco,	Halcón.
Farina,	Harina.
Fator,	Hedón.
Formosus,	Hermoso.
Ferrum,	Hierro.
Ferruor.	Hervor.
In like sort F turned into H, as	
Educacio,	Educacion.
Religio,	Religión.
Eleccio,	Elección.
The Latine ending in um, by changing um into o, as	
Ornamentum,	Ornamento.
Experimentum,	Experimento.
Exemplum.	Exemplo.
The Latine ending in is, by taking away is, as	
Materialis,	Material.
Finalis,	Finál.
Subilis,	Sutil.
Debilis, &c.	Debil.
The Latine ending in ire, by taking away ire, by Apocope, as	
Castigare,	Castigár.
Amare,	Amár.
Tener,	Tener.
Perdere,	Perder.
Sentire,	Sentir.
Salire,	Salir.

b 2

Ep.

By adding to the end of a word by Paragogic, as

<i>Apostema.</i>	<i>Apostemación.</i>
<i>Appetere.</i>	<i>Appetecer.</i>
<i>Anas.</i>	<i>Anade.</i>

By adding to the middle of a word by Epenthesis, as

<i>Certum,</i>	<i>Cíerto.</i>
<i>Cælum,</i>	<i>Cíclo.</i>
<i>Membrum,</i>	<i>Miembro.</i>
<i>Messis.</i>	<i>Miesse.</i>

By adding to the beginning of a word by Prothesis, as

<i>Plumescere,</i>	<i>Emplumecér.</i>
<i>Capistrare,</i>	<i>Encabistrár.</i>
<i>Scala,</i>	<i>Escala.</i>
<i>Scandalum.</i>	<i>Escándalo.</i>

By changing a letter by Metathesis, in the middle of a word, of the second person plurall of the Imperative mode, as D and L changing places, as soz Caſtigáde, they write Caſtigalde, soz Dezidle, they say and write Dezilde.

The Spanish sheweth [a] *Lac, milke, Léche.* [a] *Cáſer, théſe, Queso.*
his original from the [b] *Barba, a beard, Bárva.* [b] *Bibo, I drinke, Bevo.*
Latine, although by [c] *Amicus, a frend, amigo.* [c] *Acutus, Sharp, agúdo.*
corruption many [e] *into, i* as *Directus, directed, derigido, lectus, read, leydo.*
words haue changed [e] *Ferru, iron, hierro, facere, to make o, do, hazer*
letters, as in theſe fo- [f] *Regnum, a kingdome, Reyno.*
lowing & their like, as [g] *g* *y*

No difficultie
in the Spanish
tongue or other
vulgar tongues
comming from
the Latine.

I proceſſe no further herein, but leaue every Latineſt to conſider of them as he ſhall miſte with them by reading, whereby he ſhall maniſtely perceiue by the muſtude of words in this tongue derived from the Latine, how eaſie it is for euerie meane ſcholler ſpeditly to obtaine the knowledge of the ſame, and with theſe rules and precepts, which here I haue ſet downe, I doubt not but that every one (deſirous therof) may with facilitie and ſhort time ſpeakē it and write it moze than meanly: the which the better to performe, I take it the beſt order (according to the ſaying, *Qui bene diuidit bene docer.* He that diuideth the matter, he handleth well, teacheth well) to diuid this preſent Grammaſt into Orthographie, Proſody, Etymologie, and Syntaxis, of which though I haue not deale with all of all that may be ſaid, yet at leaſt that haue neceſſarie to be ſaiſe for the inſtruction of the learner in this tongue.

OF

OF ORTHOGRAPHIE

Of Grammaſt and hir parts.

Grammaſt is an Arte teaching the right rules of true ſpeaking and writing, and it is derived from the Greek word γράμμα, which is litera, as much as to ſay ſcienzia literaria, a Grammaſt.

Deuision of Grammaſt.

Grammaſt according to Quintilian, is two fold: Historiall, and Methodicall.

Historiall, gotten by imitation of Authors.

Methodicall, is taught by precepts, which onely we haue handle.

Subdiuision of Grammaſt.

Grammaſt methodicall is deuided into fower parts, Orthographie, Proſody, Etymologie, & Syntaxis.

Deuision of Grammaſt.

Orthographie, conuerſant in letters.

Proſody, in syllables.

Etymologie, in words.

Syntaxis, in ſentences.

Orthographie, of the Greek word γράμμα, right, ſeafd writing.

Proſody, of τρόπος, i.ad, & ὁρθός, canthus, that is Accentus.

Etymologie, of ἐννοεῖν, true, ἀκούειν, ſpeech.

Syntaxis, of αὐτός, con. & rel. αὐτός, ordino, quās, coordinatio.

Orthographie is a right rule of true writing, as before of ὁρθός right, ſeafd writing, whereby euerie word is to be ſet downe with his true letters, as Ciero, certaine, not ſiero.

Definition of Orthographie.

Haereto beongeth Orthopædia, which is a right rule of true ſpeaking, of ὁρθός right, & ἀκούειν, that is in ſpeaking men pronounce not moze groſſe or ſmal, then the nature of language will allow, or otherwise then the accuſamed maner of pronunciation diuinely permitted therin, as Vino, wine, not to pronounce it as Englishmen doe, Vino, but ſmaller as they pronounce the double letters, Veeno, Dios, God, not Deios, but Dheeos. But of thiſ hereafter in the letters moze at large.

Definition of Orthopædia.

And becauſe Orthographie (the former part of our Grammaſt) chiefly coniſteth in the true writing of euerie word with his right letters: It muſt of neceſſity follow, that wholouer ſpeaketh, or heareth tong ſpoken in his proper Idioma, and would write downe the ſame ſo ſpoken, that he know the power and proprietie of each letter in that tong (because of letters are the force of framed syllables, and of syllables are made words, and of words the whole ſpeech and language, letters. The which neglected, muſt needs bring a conuſion to the learner, and little or no fruite to the Teachers labour. Therefore to our purpoſe.

Letters.

There are in the Spanish tong 27 letters, whereof 24 are ſingle, and thre double.

The ſingle, A, B, C, E, F, G, H, I, J, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q, R, S, T, V, X, Y, Z.

The double are there, ch, ll, ñ.

If any aſke the queſtion, why the Spanish, being descended from the Latine, hath in it moze letters then the Latine: I anſwert, that althoſh it be now (for the moſt part of words therin) corrupt & broken Latine, yet it had at the firſt (as in the Proæme before going) his originall from the Caldean, Arabique, and Moores tong, of which they referue ſome letters.

Notes.

But now to our letters as they are in order in the Alphabet or croſſe row, without beginning with the bowels, and then ſkipping from one conſonant to another, distracting the memorie of the young beginner in a tong, which would much better repaine the precepts given theron, ſo they might not be diuinen to a new order of reckoning their letters, diuering from that in their childhood they learned, and now can hardly be drawen from.

*g, j, x, z.

A is ſounded plainly, with opening the mouth as in the Latine, French, and Italian, as in English man, can: ſo in Spanish, Manada, flocke, Enalada, a falade of herbs.

B is as the Latine, and is called litera labialis, one of the labialis or lip letters, because it cannot be pronounced without ioyning the lips together. It is pronounced as in English, baker, basket: ſo in Spanish, Bacia, a bowle, Barro, clay, but in the middle of a word, except the word come of the Latine. The Spaniards uſually confoundeth it with V, conſonant, and ſoundeth

Of Orthographie in Letters.

6

Band V consonant, written and pronounced one for another.

Nota.

Beast away.

C cast away.

ξ pronounced as the Italian z, ζ pronounced as English Chs.

D pronounced as Dh.

Ga. Go, Gu. Gua.

Gue, Gui, like Ghe, Ghi.

Ge, Gi, as je, ji, which is as in English the Oh.

G and j consonant written one for another.

H This letter is neither bowell nor consonant, but a note of aspiration, it is called in the Spanish as in the English Ache, which were more properly in my opinion to be called as some

soundeth it as V consonant, as Trabajo, trauell, they pronounce Travijo: Palabras, words, they sound Palábras: Cábra, a goat, Cávra: Labó, labour, Lavór: Albárda, a packesaddle, Alvárda: Alabárda, a hotbard, Alavárda: so oftentimes in the beginning of a word, as Baylár, to daunce, Vaylár: Bafquína, a peticoate, a kirtle, Vafquína: Bellota, an acorne, Vellota: Berméjo, red colour, Vermejo: Bexica, a bladder, Vexica. Wherefore I advise the studious in the Spanish tong, if he finde not a word in the Dictionarie, in one of these letters, let him turne to the other: as if he finde not Bayo, which is used in god Authoris for Bay touldred, or Bayard, let him looke Vayo, and there he shall finde the same: If not Vónar, to bathe, looke Bañar: If not Voz, looke Bóza, a voice.

B In the middle of a word going before another consonant, and making the pronunciation harder, is cut off in Spanish, as Subtil, they write, Sutil, Absente, Ausente, Obscuro, Oscuro, or Escuro.

C This letter hath two manner of soundings according to the vowels that follow it. If a o or u follow it, he is sounded as in Cára, a face, Coco, weuell, Cuchilla, a spone: so likewise in the middle of a word, as Descáno, rest, Escoria, dross, Escudillo, a dish: but going before e or i pronounce almost as the Italian z, as Prudentia, Dísciplina, or their i before ia or io, as Prudentia, Justificatione, Cecina, powdered flesh, Ciruela, a plum.

C Before i, cut off as Aeto, an aete: the Spaniard saith, Ato, Pacto, a covenant, Paito.

Marked with a dash vnder it thus, . called c, Cerilla, or c Cedilla, is proper to the Arabique tong, from whence it was first taken: it is sounded by putting the tong to the ranckes of the teeth, as the French, *ç*, or veire nere: the Italian z, as *Diligenza, Scienza*. This ç must be pronounced, whether it be at the beginning, end, or middle of a word, though a o or u follow: and is sounded as in English Chs, as caraguëlls, great gascoine or Spanish hose, coqueras, crose blowes of fortune, cüre, bimstone: pronounce Thsraguëlls, Thsfolobrs, Thsñfie, in like maner before e and i, as cenogiles, garters, ciénto, a hundred: pronounce Thslenogiles, Thsñento.

D Is pronounced in the beginning of a word, as in Latin, French, and Italian: as in English, Dagger, Doctor: so in Spanish, Daga, a dagger, Dóze, a dozen: this word Dios is except from this rule, and is pronounced as these that follow: that is, if d come in the middle or end of a word, you must pronounce him as d in Greek, as dh in English, as Cada, cuery, Cáda, fidelidad, fidelitie, fidelidad.

E Is as the Latin, and the Italian, and as in English, Bend, Lend: so in Spanish, Bendezir, to blesse, Bevér, to drinke: and it must never be sounded so small as the English ee, as fee, wee: nor so broad as the French do thier: feminine, as *Femme*, a woman, pronounced *Famna*, but betwixt both as first above.

F Is as the Latin and the Italian tongs, and just as the English. The Spaniard writeth him when the Latin write Ph, as *Philosophus*, in Spanish Filólofo.

G Answerable to the Hebrew Gimel, g hath two maner of soundings according to the vowels which follow it, if a o or u immediately followe, it is pronounced as in the Latin, Gabriel, Gorgia, Gubernator: Italian, Galante, Gotta, Gustare: French, Garçon, Gourmand: as in English, Gate, Gold, Gutter: so in Spanish, Gáfo, a lazare, a leapour, Gófo, rude, Gúla, gattonie.

But if after the u immediately come a, as Guante, a glove, found Gwante: Aguia, water, Agwa: i Mengua, want Mengua.

But if after u follow e or i, pronounce as the French Guerre, Guide: as in English Guest, guide: so in Spanish Guerra, war, Guia, a guide: found Gherra, Ghia, except these wordes following, Guero, adle, Aguero, sothsaying, Garguero, the throat, Siguero, a drawer or tower of a boate with a roape, Hoguero, a woodpile, Triguero, a sparwe that lieth in the wheate, Ciguena, a stork, Pedigueno, wanton, Halagueno, flattering, Siguenga, a citie of Spaine, Veraguena, shame, Aguélo, a grandfather, Deguello, a beheading, Reguelo, belking, Vnguento, ointment: and wordes that come of the Infinitive mode in Guar, as Enxaguar, to water, Enxague, Menguar, to want, Mengue.

G Before e or i is sounded as the Latin Gero: Italian, Gorno: French, Géant: English, Gefrey, Giles: or more like the Spanish, called j iota, or j consonant, which is pronounced as sh in English: so they say Gémir, to groane, pronouncing as it were written in English hemir, Gingibre, ginger, shinhözre.

For the Spaniard maketh no difference in speaking of this G before e and i, from the j consonant, and they write one for another, as Agéno, Linage, Menfage, Lilongéro, Magellad, or Ajéno, Linage, Menfage, Lilongéro, Majestad.

G Before n in the middle of a word lost, as Ignominia, Inomínia, ignominie, Ignorancia, Inoránzia, ignorance.

H This letter is neither bowell nor consonant, but a note of aspiration, it is called in the Spanish as in the English Ache, which were more properly in my opinion to be called as some

Of Orthographie in Letters.

some nations do, Ha, because it doth se import in pronouncing as in English, Hárnes, Barnes, Hata, Häng.

This H in the beginning of a word is pronounced in Spanish with more vehementie and emphasis, and in the middle or end of a word weakely and faintly. H in beginning of a word.

In the beginning he must be pronounced with more force, or else there woulde be no difference found in speaking these wordes, and their like, Háca, a nagge: A cá hithir: as Ven áca, come hither, Háska, buntill, and Aksa for a speare: Haya, a beech tree: A'ya, a turfe: Húlo, a spindle: U'lo, bfe. H taken away.

In the middle of a word not so forcible, as Ahechar, pronounce as Aechár, Alholi, Aloli, a batte og garnier. H in middle of a word.

This H goeth before all the fine bowels, as Hazér, to make or doe: Hécho, made or done: Higado, the liver: Hollin, the fute of a chinnery: Húlo, a spindle. But it may not in true Spanish orthographie be written before a consonant, as Cristo, not Christo.

Besides it is lost after T, as Ortografia, not Orthografia, Teólogo, not Theólogo. H taken away.

With P also it is lost, and the P turned into F, as Filólofo, not Philósofo, which they must observe that would write the Spanish tong aright in all that are like these. H taken away.

Where we followe H, it is pronounced as W, Huérto, a orchard: Huélo, a bone: pronounce Hué pronoufie for the Englishmans pronunciation for these and the like wordes. H taken away.

What word which beginneth with H, shall not have H in the middle, except C goe before it, as in Hécho, made, Hechizár, to bewitch and the like. H taken away.

I There be thre bindes of I in the Spanish, that is small i, Greeke y, and j Iota, or consonant. These two i, y, with a verie small slender sounde, as the French and Italianis doe, which is as the double e in English, we, shee, see, decree, so in Spanish, Tirano, a titall, I three kinds.

Tirano: Vida, life, Veeda, & not as Englishmen pronounce Teyrano, veida, which all other A note for Englishmen.

nations mislike in hearing them speaking Latine, saying, Propino tibi, they pronounce Propeño tibi, which I would wish they woulde but marke, and take notice therof: for the French, Italian, and Spanish, do learne and are taught by their Schoolemisters to pronounce the Latine different from their owne tong, otherwise one nation shoulde not understand another speaking the Latine. A note for Englishmen.

But in this tong as in the Italian and French, they must obserue except they will fal into the vice of *Iotacismus* and be laughed at, and not be understand by strangers when they speake or reade. A note for Englishmen.

This small i is used in a word as a bowell by it selfe, as Tinta, ynche, and in a diphthong, as Small i, Niéro, a nephew. A note for Englishmen.

Y is put in the beginning of a word before a bowell or consonant, as yo, ya, yr, and in the ende Y, as Daréys, Podéys.

J iota or j consonant, which this tong taketh of the Arabique, is pronounced as in French, J pronounced

Jamais, Deja, Jolan, in English like sh, as Jardin, a gardin, shardin, Járo, a pot sharr, ójo, like sh. J pronounced

an eie Øho: Hoja, a leafe, Hosha: Oveja, a sheep, Øueha: Abéja, a bee, A beha: In Se- J pronounced

uill and thereabout, they pronounce it not so much in the teeth, but more in the thzoate, as Chardin, Chiaro, Ozlo, Hozha, Overza, Abezha. J pronounced

Some authoress in the Spanish write these wordes (yet ill) and the like, with H. Hierusalem, Hierónimo, which shoud be thus Jerusalem, Jerónimo. J pronounced

K The Spaniard never blesch this letter but when it is required of the Greeke and proper names then sounded as in the English, as Kalendas. K pronounced

L, M, N, O, P. Are all pronounced as in the Latine, French, Italian, and just as in English: But P may not be doubled in Spanish, as Aprio, P not doubled.

var, to approue, Aperito, appetite, and not Approvár, Appetito. P before T in the middle of P cast away. P cast away.

Neither can L be doubled in Spanish when the wordes commeth of the Latine, and keepeth the when L not doubled.

Latine sounde, as Ilstre, in Latine Ilstris: Silaba, in Latine Syllaba: Colegio, Collegium, doubled. when L not doubled.

So likewise of N, as Tirano, not Tiranno, in Latine Tyrannus, but when they kepe not the sounde of the Latine, looke hereafter in double Ll, n, and there possy shall finde howe when N not doubled.

they are pronounced. N pronounced

Q Each two pronunciations, not of his owne nature, but by reason of a bowell following him. Q pronounced

If ua follow as in Latine and English, Quantitie, Quarter, so in Spanish Quando, when, Quartána, Quál. Q pronounced

But when ue or ui follow, it is to be pronounced as the Italian che, chi, or the French Que, Qui Qe, Ki

Qui, as English Ke, Ki, as Question, a Question or quarrell, Question, Quieto, quiet, Nieto, pronounced as except when the word is Latine, as Delinquente, Eloquence. Ke, Ki

R with

Of Orthographie in Letters.

R with the Greeks and Latins termed *Litera canina*, so the Spaniard calleth him *Letra perina*, the doggish letter, because dogs in grinning their teeth, when they would bite, sound this letter R. It is pronounced as the Latine, Italian, and French, but if it be in the beginning of a word it is sounded strongly, as the Grecians doe sound. The Spaniard saith *Rayo*, a sun beane, *Réy*, a king, or if it be doubled in the middest of a word you cannot sound both to great vehemence, as *Báro*, *Clay*, *Cáro*, a Cart. But if it be in the middest of a word and single, with a gentle and milde pronunciation, as *ára*, an altar, *Móro*, a blacke Moze.

S With x, z, and c. are pronounced (although the one moze plaine and sounding, and the rest else) by putting the tongue to the rofe of the mouth, and then hissing out the voice with the lips open as a snake, and therfore the Greeks called this letter S by that hissing name, as also made it in fashion double as a snake, with his head lifted up, accordingly is it made in Latine, Italian, and Spanish. In Spanish these letters are called *Culebrinas*, which is snake, of *Culebra*, a snake, which utter hissing.

This S is in the beginning of a word as in Latine, Italian, and French, and as in English *Sand*, *Sooth*, *Sin*, *Sod*, *Sudden*, so in Spanish *Sabér*, *Sembrár*, *Sóbra*, *Sudór*.

But if S be single in the middest of a word between two vowels, then with a gentle sound almost like Z, as the French doe, adding therby great grace to their tongue, as *Eglise* a Church, *Cafe*, so in Spanish *Caua*, *Rola*, *úlo*, *púlo*. But if it be doubled, then strongly, as in English *Crosse*, *tosled*, so in Spanish *Fuéssemos* *grueso*.

In the end of a word as Z, as *Cártas*, Letters, *Cámaras*, Chambers, or going to stcole. And note that this letter cannot be in the beginning of a word when a consonant next followeth. Therfore you must write *Elpico*, I hope, and not *Spero*. *Escrivo*, I write, and not *Sciivo*.

T Is pronounced as in the Latine, Italian, French & English, except it can never sound c, as the Latins, Italians, French and English doe when after i followeth i with a bowell, as in Latine *Prudencia*, Italian *Amicitia*, French *Justification*, English *Ambition*, in Spanish it must be written *Prudencia*, *Amicia*, *Justificación*, *Ambición*, otherwise the writing were false, and you should pronounce Ti as in *Tibi*.

Also if H follow T, as *Theólogo*, *Theopómpo*, write and pronounce *Teólogo*, *Teopómpo*.

U pronounced broad as ou.

U Being a bowell not to be pronounced with a small sound as English, *Sue*, *Bue*, *Crue*, *Blue*, but as the French doth in his diphthong ou, almost as the English ou, as *Tu*, *tou*, *Buche*, the maw, *Bouche*. But being a consonant is pronounced as in other languages in the beginning of a word, as *Vaca*, a Cow, *Vena*, a Veine, *Vino*, Wine, *Vóto*, a Vow, *Vilgo*, the common people, in the middest of a word as *Áváro*, *Gávia*, *áva*. Also when two ou come together, and a bowell following, the second is a consonant, as *úvo*, *Túve*, except *Vuélstro*.

X pronounced as sh. X and j written often in Spanish one for another.

X Is one of the Culebrinas lertas, the snake or hissing letters, as above said in the letter S, and is pronounced like J consonant, and the Spaniard often writeth one for another, as *Xaráue*, *árrup*, *Jaráue*, and is pronounced as the French ch, as the English sh, as *Faxa*, a waistband, *Bruxa*, a hag, *Flóxo*, *weake*, *Falha*, *Brusha*, *Flosho*.

Y Is above in I.

Z Is called in Spanish *Zéra*, as the Hebrew Zain, from whence it is drawn, and from the Moorish tongue, and is pronounced as the English Z, as *Zángano*, a *dz*oane, *Zélo*, *zeale*, *Zodiaco*, the *Zodiacke*, so likewise in the end of a word, as *Bóz*, a voice, *Crúz*, a *Crosse*.

Ch as in English Ch.

Ll pronounced as Li.

ñ pronounced as ni.

Ch Before any of the five bowels to be pronounced as in English, Chapman, Chiefely, *Chicken*, *Chop*, *Chose*: so in Spanish, *Chamelote*, *Chamlet*: *Chiminea*, a Chimney: *Chórtio*, a broke: *Chúslma*, a companie of people of the common sort.

Ll Is g in Italian, as *Caragli*, *Moglie*, *Figli*, as double Li in French, as *Fille*, *Coquille*, as Li in English, as *Láno*, *plaine*: *Lléno*, *full*: *Llovér*, to raine: *Lúvia*, *raine*: pronounce *Láno*, *Lléno*, *Liovér*, *Lúvia*: so likewise in the middle of a worde, as *Querellólo*, *Kerrelíolo*, quarrelsome: in the end of a worde never in Spanish written double, as *Mil*, a thousande, not *Mill*.

ñ As the Italian and French gn, *Montagna*, *Campagna*, French *Compagnon*, *Mignon*, in English as ni: as *Montaña*, a mountaine, *Montaña*, *Campaña*, *Compánia*, so *Dáño*, *olle*, *Damny*, *Báño*, a bath, *Banyo*.

Of Orthographic in Diphthonges.

A Diphthong (according to the definition of Grammarians) is a sounding together of two different bowels as if they were but one only, as in English, *Aide*, *Auditóz*.

In Spanish there are twelve sorts. The first in a, or ay, as *gána*, and *cántaís*. But when two bowels come together 1. *Ai*, *ay*, and make more then one sound, they shoule be marked over head with two pitches, to take away confusion, as *Cáida*, pronounced *Cáida*, and so the rest.

The second in ao, where a is more sounded then o, as *Quartáo*, a *neg*, *Sáro*, a hall to dencie 2. *Ao*, in *Vilbío*, a proper name of a towne, are pronounced in the same sort, as *Cáta manu*.

The third in au, where a sounds more then u, as *Cáusa*, *Autor*, *Caudillo*: except 1 and, a flute, 3. *Au*, *Ataid*, a tombe: *La-úd*, *Ata-úd*.

The fourth in ei and ey, where e is more sounded then i, as *Rey*, a king, *Léy*, d' *law*: when 4. *Ei*, *ey*, they are severall, write them with two pitchs thus, *Léfies*, *Rey*.

The fifth in eu, where e is most perceived, as *Féudo*, *Déudo*, *Reuma*: being disjoined write 5. *Eu*, thus: *Reuníar*, *Reúngir*.

The six in ia, in which i is more heard sound then i, as *Saia*, *Vaia*, *Malicia*, *Precencia*: except 6. *Ia*, *Mía*, *Díaz*, *Portia*, *Devília*.

The seventh, ie, ye, where e is most heard pronounced as *Viéndo*, *Scíento*, *Viéne*, *Bién*, *Quién*, 7. *Ie*, *ye*, *Quiéra*, *Ariéndo*, *Dispiéto*, *Apriéto*, *Pic*, *Piéda*, *Tierra*, *Ciélo*, *Inférno*, *Díez*, *Síte*, *Miel*, *Hiel*.

The eighth in io, or yo, where o is most sounded, as *Yo*, *Dió*, *Vió*: except *Mio*, *Rio*, *Frío*, *Tío*. 8. *Io*, *yo*.

The ninth in ir, where i is more heard then the u, as *Ciudad*, a citie. 9. *Iu*.

The tenth in oí, or oy, as *Soy*, *Doy*, *Oygo*: except *Oydo*, *Roýdo*. 10. *Oí*, *oy*.

The eleventh in ue, where e more sounded then u, as *Fuérca*, *Muérte*, *Fuérte*, *Cuérno*, *Nuevo*, 11. *Ue*.

Fuego, *Húslgo*, *Nuérz*, *Víhuela*.

The twelve in ui, and uy, where u is more sounded then the i, as *Muy*, *Fuy*, *Cuidádo*, *Húyo*. 12. *Ui*, *uy*.

Power Rules following shewing how every vowel maketh a feuerall syllable by himselfe, or is sounded in diphthong with another.

The first Rule.

If betweene two bowels come h, or a consonant, such bowels cannot ioyne themselves together to make a syllable or diphthong, as *Ahinc*, *Bolár*, except *Auré*, *Aurás*, *Aurás*, *Aurémos*, *Auréys*, where u, r and the bowell make a syllable, the like in *Auria*, *Aurámos*.

The second Rule.

Any two bowels comming together, neither of them being i nor u, make two syllables, as *Neemias*, *Posseir*, *Roér*, except these Hebrew words which end in two es, as *Osce*, *Bochim*, *Bersabé*.

The third Rule.

When the first person of a verbe doth end in two bowels, and the first bowell being i, and the accent stand upon the same i, then that i maketh a syllable of it selfe without ioyning it selfe with the bowell following, as *Embio*, *Embias*, *Embíamos*, *Porfio*, *Porfias*, *Porfian*, *Espio*, *Espian*, *Confio*, *Confias*, *Confia*.

The fourth Rule.

But if the word doth end in two bowels, and the first of them being i, and the accent not on the first, then they make both the bowels a diphthong into a syllable, as *Grácia*, *Justicia*, *Da- niél*, *Ezechiél*, *Gabriél*, *Sentencia*, *Vítoria*, and in like sort doe they when they haue the accent on the last of them, as *Pallión*, *Religión*, *Nación*, *Cucin*, *Racion*, because they come of words of the Latine that haue their accent in the Antepenitima, therefore must the Spanish haue it in the Vlma. Except these words in Spanish, *Anciano*, *Dioclesiano*, *Diáblo*.

Of Triphthonges.

A Triphthong is a sounding of these bowels into one syllable with one pitch together, and after five letters.

The first in aí or ay, as *Vayáys*, *Espaciáys*, where a is heard more then i, and the like sort.

The second in eí or ey, where e is more sounded then i, as *Enfuzíeys*, the like sort.

The third in iue or yue, as *Hoyúlo*, *Arroyuídor*, the like sort.

The fourth in uaí or uay, as *Guáy*, *Guáy*, the like sort.

The fifth in ueí or uey, as *Buéy*, *Buéy*, the like sort.

Of

Of Prosodia or Accents, the seconde part of this Grammar.



Description of
Prosodia.

Spanish
not
subject to
Latine
accents.

Of the Latine,
the Latine ac-
cent.

Words ending in
D, l, N, or R
accented in the
last syllable.

Except these.

Nota.
Opus laboriu.

2 Accents in
one worde.

Orthographie handleth letters, so Prosodia treateth of syllables, and the right sounding and pronouncing the same with their true accents, which is to make the syllable or worde long or short, soft or sharpe, without the which the learner can not tell how to read or pronounce the tong, much lesse to be understood when he speaketh the same, whereby he shall be not only disgraced, but be driven to bestowed longer time, in forgetting that ill touch taken vp, then he might bee in going forward in learning fift times so much. The which being carefullly looked vnto at the first, cannot but much adorne the speaker, make himselfe understood, as also giuing himselfe exceeding comfort in going forward, when he knoweth her singeth true harmonie, which cannot but delight those that will listn thereto.

Prosodia, is a rule of knowledge, shewing with what accent every syllable of a worde is to be pronounced, as Cárcel, not CárceL a prisone.

Many haue affirmed the Spanish tong to be subject to the Latine accents, seeing it is for the most parte derived from the same, but common speach and use shewe the contrarie in manie wordz, as Latin Génesis, in Spanish Genésis, Sódoma, in Spanish Sodóma, Hélena, Helena, so in Latin ámor, in Spanish amor, autor, cérasus, Céreso. But yet note this, that wordz derived of the Latine do keepe the accent of the Latine, except some proper names or wordz ending in d, l, n, or r, as Abstinentia, Abstinençia, Obedientia, Obediencia, Beneficio, Blando, Caduco, Ceremonia, Cílpa, Digno, Dóte, Familia, Fecondo, Furioso, Prémio.

But if they end in d, l, n, or r, then they haue alwaies the accent in the last syllable, as Amistad, Pechilencíal, Camelón, Pastor.

Except some few ending in l, n, r, ángel, ábil, apóstol, árbol, jóven, lóor, ánsar, ámbar, acíbar, áquí-
car, açofar, alcáçar, nácar, tibar, cármen, cáncer, carácter, cárcel, Cristóval, cónsul, crímen, débil,
descíbil, móbil, Immóbil, fócil, dócil, Estéril, estércol, fácil, Datil, frágil, vtil, invíl, fértil, inábil,
mástil, márgen, mártir, mármol, Trébol, órden, origen, virgen, exámen, volumen, imágen, bérmen,
Estévan, and verie fewe or none besides these, for that in setting thef downe I ran ouer (as
neare as I conide) every word in the whole Dictionarie, whereby you may conjecture, what
galnes, trouble, & time, such booke of such method as this haue bestowed on them, before they can
come forth to the to the learner in a moment, that which the compoter can hardly finde out in
a moneth; but if any other there be, I haue accented them in their places, as all the wordz ge-
nerally in the whole Dictionarie whatsoeuer to make the beginner, and also the well read to bee
perfet in the pronunciation, without which he shall be derided, as not understood when he
readeth or speakest.

All noues in ion, and in or, accent in the last syllable, as Occasión, Predicadór, so also in
i, s, z, as Alcauci, Cortés, Perináz, Cerviz, except Adives, a beast in Barbaric like a foxe, which
barketh and crieth in the night as loud as a foxe.

Although in the Latine there is in no worde but one accent dominant, yet in the Spanish
often are two found, as Ciéraménte, Fuéraménte, wherefore I will set downe the oder of the
Spanish accenting, first giuing example of those wordes which continually are accented, then
of those which are sometimes, and sometimes not; last of al, those which haue two of these accents.

These wordz alwaies accented, as

Hé há
yé yé
aquí acá
féd fóy
cál báz
grán áy
Augustín acullá.

These wordz following sometime accented, sometime not, as
Al, If it be an article, it is not accented, as Dezid al Schór ésto, Tell your master this. But
if it be not an article, it is then accented, as Penfád en ál, Thinke on some thing.

Aun, When que followeth it is not accented, as Pédro aunque sépa morir no hará, Peter al-
though he knew he shoud die, he woud not doe it. But asking a question it is then accen-
ted, as Aún duérimes Pedro? Doe you sleepe yet Peter?

Ante, Being a Preposition is not accented, as Ante Dios estámos, we stand before God. But
being an Article it is accented, as Ante vino Pédro que Juán, Peter came before John.

Cerca,

Of Prosodia or Accents.

Cerca, a Preposition not accented, as Cercá todós dái buén exemplo, I broue all giue good
example. But if it be a Verbe, as Duerthe, or Noune or this particle De going before or fol-
lowing, then it is accented, as El Rey cerca con su gente, que tiene, cerca de si, la ciudad y la
rodéa cerca today, y tiene la cerca de piedra, y de cerca parece fuerte. The king doth besiege with
his people, which he hath about him, the citie, and compasseth it all about, neare vnto it,
which hath his wall of stone, and neare hand it seemeth strong.

Demi, A possesive not accented, as De mi padre heredé virtud, Of my father I inherited vertue.
But if it be not a possesive it is accented, as De mí hablás segun veo, You speake of me as
I perceine.

Del, The article not accented, as Del virtuoso es la virtud amada, Vertue is beloued of the ho-
nest. But if it be a Pronome it is accented, as Dios es bueno y del nos viene el bien, God is
good, and from him cometh goodnes.

Do, Spoken indefinitely not accented, as Do estuviere el bueno estaré yo, Where the good man
shall be, there will I be also. But spoken in asking a question it is accented, as Dó está
Juán? Where is John?

El, Being an Article not accented, as El bueno teme a Dios, The iust feareth God. If it be a
Pronome then accented, as Cristo nos áma y él nos redimió, Christ loueth vs, and he it is
that hath redeemed vs.

Entre, A Preposition not accented, as Entre los santos deseo estar, I desire to be among the
godly. But being a Verbe is accented, as Entré Pédro y no Juan, Let Peter enter and not
John.

Mas, The Coniunction not accented, as No hágais mal, mas hazed bien, Doe not euill but doe
good. But being an Article, then it is, as Más quíero bive, &c. y es más querido, He iuich
more at quiet, &c. and is better beloued.

Medio, In composition not accented, as Medio en burlas, medio en veras, Halfe in iest, halfe in
earnest. If alone, then otherwise, as Tenéd el medio en colas, &c. a meane in matters.

Nos, Not accented, as Hábla nos Jesú, Christ telleth vs. But if it be a nominatiue case to the
verbe, then it is, as Nós queremos, we will, &c.

Vn, Not accented, as Vn hombre, A man. But if y the Coniunction goe before, then it is, as
Dí le pán, y ún real, I gaue him bread and sixe pence.

These wordz following not accented, as

Alo, Alos, Aunque, Con, Dc, Dela, Delo, Delas, Delos, Demis, Desde, Desque, Doa, Doña,
E, En, En mis, Enlo, Enlos, Enla, Enlas, Fray, Y, Lo, Le, Mc, Micr, Mossen, as Micr sancho, y Moisen
Pedro viénen, Master Sanches and Master Peter comes, Ni, Os, Pero, Pues, Por, Quan, Quel,
these, San, Si, Su, So, Tan, Tal. Also all the Articles while they keepe the nature of Articles, which are

A, al, alá, alo, alas, alos,
Del, dela, delo, delos, delas,
El, la, las, Lo, los, le, les.

Words of two Accents.

A'ltaménte, Hárto básta, Buénaménte, Biénditaménte, Ciértaménte, Bienaventuradámente, Dié- Words of two
straménte, Gráveménte, Grañosaménte, Yguálménte, Júntaménte, Luéngaménte, Magnificaménte, Ra- Accents,
zonabléménte, Ráraménte, Sábiaménte.

Words of three Accents.

Múy málaménte, Máybuénaménte.

Words of three
Accents.

Of

Note.

Of Etymologie and the Nowne.

Definition of Etymologie.



Etymologie, is a Rule of shewing and searching out the originall of words, with that pertaineth to them.

This searching out of original and descendance of words is considered in divers manners: but among the rest, for the beginners in any language whatsoever, this is so necessary, that without it, they could not understand or learne it: The which by the Latine Grammarians hath bee, and is called Declension and Coniugation (which is likewise a declination) but that the former is of the Nownes, and the other of the Verbes.

The Spanish hath eight parts of Speech, as the Latin.

Nowne, Pronowne, Verbe, Participle.	Declined, Coniunction, Preposition, Interction.	Verbe, Coniunction, Preposition, Interction.	Undeclined.
----------------------------------------------	----------------------------------------------------------	-------------------------------------------------------	-------------

Of the Nowne.

Primitive.
Derivative.

Nownes be denided into Substantives and Adiectives, which are likewise denided into Primitiues, Derivative.

The Primitiue, which is not derived of any other, but is Primū, of himself, as Abéja, a bee. The Derivative, is drawn from the Primitiue, as Abejonizo, a great Bee. And of like nature to these Primitiue nownes, are these Interrogatiues, Redditiues, and Numerals following.

To the Primitiue, these following, and the like are subiect, as The Interrogatiue, as Quién? who? Quál? what manner? Cuánto? how much? Cuántos? how many.

The Latine which answereth to the Interrogatiue, as tal, such a one, Tantos, so many.

Numerall.
Cardinal.

The Numerall to which these kinds following do belong, as

Cardinal, from which as from a fountaine the rest do spring, these do I wish the learner to haue by hart.

1	vno	21	veinte uno	1500	míl y quinientos
2	dos	22	veinte dos, &c.	2000	dos mil
3	tres	30	tríenta	3000	tres mil
4	quátro	40	cuarenta	4000	cuátro mil
5	cíncio	50	cincuenta	5000	cíncio mil
6	seýs	60	sesenta	6000	seýs mil
7	siéte	70	setenta	7000	siéte mil
8	ócho	80	ochenta	8000	ócho mil
9	nuéve	90	noventa	9000	nuéve mil
10	diéz	100	cien, oꝝ ciénto	10000	diéz mil
11	ónze	101	ciento y uno	100000	cien mil
12	dóze	200	docientos y dozientos	1000000	millón
13	tréze	300	trezientos	2000000	dos millones
14	catorze	400	cuatrocientos	3000000	tres millones
15	quinze	500	quinientos		
16	diés y seýs	600	seiscientos		
17	diéz y siéte	700	síetecientos		
18	diéz y ócho	800	ochocientos		
19	diez y nuéve	900	nuévecientos		
20	véynce	1000	mil		

Ordinal
Numerals.

The ordinals, which declare the order of a place or time, as Primero, segundo, tercero, quarto, quinto, sexto, séptimo, oꝝ seteno, octavo, nono, oꝝ noveno, décimo, oꝝ dezeno, onzeno, dozeno, trezeno, catorzeno, quinzeno, décimo sexto, décimo séptimo, décimo octavo, décimo nono, veinteno, veinteno uno, veinteno dos, &c. Treinteno, quarenteno, cincuenteno, sesenteno, setenteno, ochenteno, noventeno, centeno, oꝝ ciento, doscientenos, trecentenos, quacientenos, quinientenos, seycientenos, sietecientenos, ochocientenos, nuevecientenos, miléssimo.

Partatives

Partatives which signifie many severally, as Cada uno, every one, Entrámbo, both of Partative them, ni uno, ni otro, neither of them, oꝝ one among many as otro, another, algúno some body. Universals, as todos, all: ninguno, no body. Particulars, as Algúno, some body. Adverbials, joyning the Cardinal Numerals with this Adverbie vez, as vna vez, once: Particular dos vezés, twice: tres vezés, thrise: diez vezés, ten times: cien vezés, a hundred times: mil vezés, numerals. Adverbial numerals.

Deriuatiues.

Deriuatiues, which haue contained vnder them these following, viz. Of countries or townes, as Aragonéz, a man of Aragon: Andaluz, a man of Andaluzia: Granado, a man of the city or countrie of Granada: Gaditano, a man of Cadiz or Caliz. Of the nation, as Dalmácios, people of Dalmacia: Ingleses Englishmen, or people of England: Of the nation. Escoceses, Scottishmen: Francéces, Frenchmen: Moros, blacke Mozes: Turcos, Turkes. Words in ós are deriuatiue of their Primitiues, as Mentiroso, lying, of Mentira, a lie: Clamoró, so, clamorous, of Clamor, clamor: glorióso, &c. Of signifying excesse in ódo, and ázo, as Baruido, hauing a great long beard, of Barba, jarrázo, a great blowe with a cup, of jarro a cup: Papudo, hauing a great wide thoate, of Papo a Excessus in th'oate: Rodillazo, a great blowe with the knee, of Rodilla a knee. Deminutives in ico, iro, éta, uela, illa, illo, as Bonico, Bonito, prettie, good: vaquera, vaquilla, a little cowe or heifer, of Vaca a cowe: Ropilla a little gowne or cassocke, of Ropa: Calderuélula, a little kettle, of Calderón a kettle: Cardenillo, somewhat blacke and bley, of Cardeno blacke and bley.

Of Numbers.

To Nounes as well Substantives as Adiectives, there are these affectiues following belonging, Number, Case, Gender.

The Number sheweth the quantitie, the Case the qualitie, and the Gender the sexe. There are two Numbers. The Singular and the Plurall. The Singular speaking of one, as Libro, a booke. The Plurall of moe, as Libros, bookes.

This is a generall Rule, if the singular number doe end in a voyell, the plurall number is made by putting to's, as Palabra, palabras, Cuerpo, cuerpos, Muerte, muertes, Javalí, javalis.

Except some few, which must haue es added to them, as Rey, reyes, Léy, léyes, Fe, fées, Buéy, buéyes, so in this manner all nounes ending in consonants must haue es added to them, as Mercé, mercédes, Ciudad, ciudádes, Mortál, mortáles, Póstór, póstores, &c.

Numbers.

Of Cases.

The Spanish hath Cases as the Latine, but all in one ending or termination, and are declined with an article, as the Nominatiue with el la, the Genitiue with the Preposition De, as the Italian and French, the Datitive Para, the Accusatiue a, the Ablatiue as the Genitiue de.

Of Genders.

The MASCULINE, as El Padre, the father. The FEMININE, as La Madre, the mother. There are three, The NEUTER, which is of small use with the Spanish, as Lo sincero, Lo malo, for they speake by the substantiue, as La sinceridad, El mal. Genders. Rules to know the gender of most part of Nounes.

To know the Genders, obserue well these Rules following. All nounes ending in lo, orz, are commonly of the MASCULINE gender, as Cardinál, a Cardinall, Cárdo, a Chisile, Paster, a Shepherd. Except la Cárcel, a prison, la Piéz, the fist, la Cár, MASCULINE. la Cutier, la Equinoctial, the Equinoctiall, la Naual, a battell at sea, la Hiel, gall, la Sal, Salt, Exception. la Máno, a hand.

All nounes for the most part in a, d, or ion, are of the FEMININE gender, as Mantéca, Butter, Magistad, Majestie, Deliberación, Deliberation, Names.

Of Etymologie and a Noun.

Names of trees commonly the Masculine gender, and the fruits the feminine, as	El Peral, a Pear tree. El Ciruelo, a Plum tree. El Narrano, an Orange tree. El Cidro, the Citron tree. El Manzano, the Apple tree. El Camuso, the Pippen tree. El Cerizo, the Cherry tree. El Almendro, the Almond tree. El Avellano, the Hazel nut tree. El Castaño, the Chestnut tree. El Nogal, the Wall nut. El Azebrino, the Olive tree. El Olivo, idem. El Morál, the Mulberry tree. El Granado, the Pomegranate tree.	La Pera, the Pear. La Ciruela, the Plum. La Naranja, the Orange. La Cidra, the Citron fruit. La Manzana, the Apple. La Camusa, the Pippen. La Cerza, the Cherry. La Almendra, the Almond. La Avellana, the Hazel nut. La Castaña, the Chestnut. La Nuez, the Wall nut. La Azebrina, the Olive. La Oliva, idem. La Mora, the Mulberry fruit. La Granada, the Pomegranate.
-------------------------------------------------------------------------------	------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

Exception.

Except these whose tree and fruit are both Masculine, as	El Menbrillo, the Quince tree and Quince fruit. El Limón, the Lemon tree and fruit. El Alverchigo, the Apricot tree and fruit. El Avercúque, idem. El Péró, the tree and fruit of a kind of Apple, very rawe, and cold by nature, good to roste, red on one side.
----------------------------------------------------------	-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

Another exception.

Except these also whose fruit is the Masculine, as	El Higo, the Fig. El Dátil, the Date. & tree the Feminine, as	La Higuera, the Fig tree. La Palmera, the Date tree or Palm tree. La Parra, the Vine, or Lavida.
----------------------------------------------------	---------------------------------------------------------------------	--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

Verbals in or are of the masculine gender, and make themselves feminine, by putting to a, as Habladó, a prater, Habladóra, a she prater.
Likewise Nounes in o, make their feminine, by changing o into a, as Honrado, honored, by putting to a. Honráda: Suégra, a father in law, Suégra, a mother in law.

Of Declensions and of the Article.

Declension of the Article.

The Spanish (as likewise the Italian and French) have but one manner of Declension or declining, that is with the Article, which in Spanish is thus declined;

Article masculine Sing.	Nom. el. Gen. del. Dat. Para el. Acc. a el, al, a lo. Abl. del, de lo.	Nom. los. Gen. de los. Dat. Para los. Acc. a los. Abl. de los.
-------------------------	------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	----------------------------------------------------------------------------

The Feminine Article thus.

Article feminine Sing.	Nom. la. Gen. de la. Dat. para la. Acc. a la, ala. Abl. de la.	Nom. las. Gen. de las. Dat. para las. Acc. a las. Abl. de las.
------------------------	----------------------------------------------------------------------------	----------------------------------------------------------------------------

In the Spanish (as Italian and French) the Article Masculine is put oftentimes in steede of the Feminine, when the word beginneth with a vowel, as el agua, the water, el alma, the soule: to make the pronunciation more sweete. Euphonia gratia, and it may also be put la agua, la alma.

Also in the Spanish (as Italian and French) the Article is never separated from Nounes Appellatiues, neither in Singular nor Plurall number: as Spanish, el libro, los libros, la cámara, a chamber, las cámaras. But in Nounes proper it is not used so: for it were absurd to say, el Francisco, la Iuana: neither is it used with this word Dios, except there be joined with it some Epithet, as el Dios todo poderoso, God almighty.

Nota.

Declining

Of Etymologie and a Noun.

Declining of a Nowne.

All nownes are thus declined, Sing.	Nom. el maestro. Gen. del maestro. Dat. para el maestro. Acc. a el, o al maestro. Abl. del maestro.	Nom. los maestros. Gen. de los maestros. Dat. para los maestros. Acc. a los maestros. Abl. de los maestros.
-------------------------------------	-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

The feminine gender thus, Sing.	Nom. la doctrina. Gen. de la doctrina. Dat. para la doctrina. Acc. a la doctrina. Abl. de la doctrina.	Nom. las doctrinas. Gen. de las doctrinas. Dat. para las doctrinas. Acc. a las doctrinas. Abl. de las doctrinas.
---------------------------------	--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

Adiectives are declined like the Substantives both singular and plurall number.

Comparatiues and Superlatiues.

The Spanish to make comparison, in the Comparative degree bled this particle Mas, as Comparatiues. Mas diligent, more diligent, Mas vil, more vile: and to diminish, they bled Méno, as Méno diligent, less diligent, Méno vil, less vile.

The Superlatiue.

The Superlatiue is made of this particle Muy, as Muy justo, herie full: sometime with ex- Superlatiues. aggrating & magnifying a matter, they forme their Superlatiues from nownes Adiectives, as Ilustrissimo, Humanissimo, Hermosissima, most excellent, most humaine, most beautifull.

These following thus compared.

Bueno, mejor, or mas bueno.

Malo, peor, muy malo.

Grande, mayor, muy grande, or Grandissimo.

Chico, menor, or mas chico, muy chico.

Mucho, mas, muy mucho, or muchissimo.

Poco, menos, muy poco.

There be also Adiectives of qualite wherof are used with Comparative & Superlatiue, as nownes wherof they come, as Muy, mas elegantamente, much more eloquiently; Muy mas discretamente, much more discretly. In like manner, Prepositions, as Detras, behinde, mas Detras, more behinde; muy Detras, much behinde; Debaxyo, beneath or under, mas Debaxyo, more below or under, muy Debaxyo, much under or beneath.

A Pronouine.

The Spanish Pronouine is as the Latine, like the Pronouine, and is used in rehersing, of a proper name of Pro and Nomén, i. for the name and in speech is used therfore.

Pronouines are deuided into Primitiues and

The Primitiues are these, yo, tu, él, etc, aquelle, el, etc, aquell, que, quen, mismo, to Primitiues, which Mismo all before going may be coupled, as yo mismo, I my selfe: tu mismo, thou thy selfe: si mismo, himselfe: el mismo, he himselfe, and so may you say yo misma, tu misma, &c. they are called Primitiues because they are primi, first, and not derived of others.

Primitiues deuided into Demonstratiues.

They are called Demonstratiues because they shew a thing not spoken of before, as yo, tu, si, aquelle, este, etc, &c.

Relatiues are repeating or having relation to some thing spoken before, as si, etc, que, Relatiues, quien, el qual, &c.

Derlatiues or Possessives, because they be derived of the Primitiues and Sanisse pot. Derlatiues, lession, as belonging to some thing, as mio, miyo, oyo, oyo, siyo, or si, nuestro, vuestro.

In Pronouines are rarerly to be noted, the Persons, because all Nounes and Partic-

les.

Of Etymologie and a Pronouine.

pleas be of the thirde Person, but Pronounes of all three Persons, as yo and his Plurall nos, be of the first Person, Tu and his Plurall vos, of the second: and all the rest whatsoever of the thirde Person, according to this rule. All Nounes, Pronounes, and Particples, be of the third Person, except yo and tu.

The first person Yo, thus declined.

Yo declined.

Sing.	Dom. yo.	Dom. nos, nosotros.	Nosotros.
	Gen. de mi.	Gen. de nos, de nosotros.	de nosotras.
	Dat. Para mi.	Dat. Para nos, para nosotros.	Para nosotras.
	Accu. a mi, a me.	Accu. a nos, a nosotros.	a nosotras.
	Abl. de mi.	Abl. de nos, de nosotros.	de nosotras.

This Pronouine in the singular number serveth as well for the Masculine as Feminine gender, so in the Plurall doth Nos. But Nosotros only to the Masculine, and Nosotras to the Feminine.

The Spaniard in speche writing vseth this Pronouine Nos with the first person plurall of the Imperative mode, by taking away s, from the Verbe, as Vámonos, for Vámox Nos, let vs go: Dáxamoxos, for Dexamoxos Nos, let vs leave.

From this Pronouine Primitiue are two other derived, one from the Singular number, as Mio, from yo, another from the Plurall Number as Nuestro from Nosotros.

Mi, and Mio, Mio, Mia, in Latine *Meus, mea, meum*, in Italian *Mio, mia*, in French *Mon, ma*.

Example.

Sing.	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.
	Dom. Mi, mio.	Mia.	Dom. Mis, misos.	Mias.
	Gen. de mi, de mio.	de mia.	Gen. de mis, de misos.	de mias.
	Dat. Para mi, para mio.	para mia.	Dat. para mis, para misos.	para mias.
	Accu. a mi, a mio.	a mia.	Accu. a mis, a misos.	a mias.

The learner in the Spanish must note, the manner how the Spaniard vseth these Possessives, Mi, mio, Tu, tuyo, Su, suyo: and when he ought to vse them in speche or writing, otherwise straight he will bewray himselfe in vsing unproperly the tong.

Mi, tu, su, are still vsed, ioyned with another word, as Mi: caballo, my horse, not Mio caballo: Tu: piensamiento, thy thought, not Tuyo pensamiento: Su: provecho, his profit, not Suyo provecho: Tu, su, are to be vsed.

But when a question is asked, and Mio, Tuyo, Suyo, put absolutely and not ioyned, as Cuya es esa espada? whose rapier is this? Answere: Mio, tuya, suya, mine, thine, his: and not Mi, tu, su: De quien es este cuchillo? whose knife is this? Answere, Mio, tuyo, suyo: and not Mi, tu, su.

In like sorte when they make a relation of a thing spoken of before, and are placed at the end of a sentence, clause or period, as este caballo no es mio, mas de aquél que a mi lo dexó, para que yo fuésse a una casa tuya: this horse is not mine but his that left it me, that I shoule ride to one of thy houses, and you cannot say; este caballo es mi; que yo fuésse a una casa tuá.

Chefe and many such like I wish the learner in the Spanish to marke diligently in an houre as he reades.

To make the Plurall number of Mi, Tu, Su, adde to s, as Mis, Tus, Sus, and so of other words whatsoever, as before of numbers in the Nounes.

This other derived from the Plurall Nosotros is thus declined.

Sing.	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.
	Dom. Nuestro, de Nuestra.	Nuestros, de Nuestras.	Dom. Nuestros, de Nuestras.	Nuestro, de Nuestra.
	Gen. de Nuestro, de Nuestra.	de Nuestros, de Nuestras.	Gen. de Nuestros, de Nuestras.	de Nuestro, de Nuestra.
	Dat. para Nuestro, para Nuestra.	Dat. para Nuestros, para Nuestras.	Dat. para Nuestros, para Nuestras.	Dat. para Nuestro, para Nuestra.
	Accu. a Nuestro, a Nuestra.	a Nuestros, a Nuestras.	Accu. a Nuestros, a Nuestras.	a Nuestro, a Nuestra.

The second person Tu, thus declined.

Second person, Tu.	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.
	Dom. Tu,	Vos.	Vosotros,	Voteras.
	Gen. de Ti,	de Vos,	de Vosotros,	de Voteras.
	Dat. para Ti,	Plur.	Dat. para Vos, para Vosotros,	para Voteras.
	Accu. a Ti, a Te,	Accu.	a Vos, a Vosotros,	a Voteras.

Note that the Spaniard most ordinarily ioyneth to the Infinitiue mode of any verbe, this particle os, which is as much as vos, as Habloos, to speake unto you; Vero, to see you, Deciros, to tell you.

Of Etymologie and a Pronouine.

Of this Primitiue, likewise come two Derivatiues, the one of the Singular number, as of Tu comes Tuyo, in Latin *Tuus, Tua, Tuum*, Italian *Tu, Tu, Tu*, French *Tu, Tu, Tu*, the other of the Plurall, Vos or Vostros comes Vuéstro.

Example.

Sing.	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.
	Dom. Tu,	Tuya,	Dom. Tuyos,	Tuyas.
	Gen. de Tu,	de Tuya,	Gen. de Tuyos,	Tuyas.
	Dat. para Tu,	Tuya,	Dat. para Tuyos,	Tuyas.
	Accu. a Tu,	a Tuya,	Accu. a Tuyos,	Tuyas.

But note how the Spaniard and Italian accounteth it a disgrace to speake to any man in the second person Singular either in the Nominative Tu, or in other cases Tuya; except it be to his Master, his slave, his lackie, his keeper, or to some of base a bale account. To their servants of the better reckoning, and to artificers and such like persons, they speake in the seconde person Plurall, as Traed aqui, bring hither, &c. Yréys a mi capiiero, you haue go to my shomaker, Dircys que me haga unos borzeguis, and you shall tell him that he mase me a paire of buskins.

To all others they vse the third person, as Quiere V.M. andar, will your Mastership go?

Ruega a V.M. que me haga esa merced, &c. I intreat your Mastership that you doe me this curtesie, &c.

And whereas Englishmen say You, the French *Vous*, the Spaniard and the Italian speake in the third person singular, as V.M. V.S. your Mastership, or worship as

The other Derivative of the plural number is this, Vuéstro, of Vos or Vostros, in Latine *Vestery, vestra, vestrum*, in Italian *Vostro, Vostra*, French *Votre*, in English *Yours*.

Example.

Sing.	Dom.	Vuéstro,	Vuéstra,	Dom.	Vuéstros,	Vuéstras.
	Gen.	de Vuéstro,	Vuéstra,	Gen.	de Vuéstros,	Vuéstras.
	Dat.	para Vuéstro,	Vuéstra,	Dat.	para Vuéstros,	Vuéstras.
	Accu.	a Vuéstro,	Vuéstra,	Accu.	a Vuéstros,	Vuéstras.
	Abl.	de Vuéstro,	Vuéstra,	Abl.	de Vuéstros,	Vuéstras.

The third person Si, thus declined.

Sing.	Dom.	caret.	Of this Primitiue one Derivative, which signifieth in Plural.
	Gen. de si,		
	Dat. para si,		
	Accu. a si,		
	Abl. de si,		

Sing.	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.
	Dom. su,	Suyo,	Dom. sus,	Suyos, Suyas.
	Gen. de su,	Suyo,	Gen. de sus,	Suyos, Suyas.
	Dat. para su,	Suyo,	Dat. para sus,	Suyos, Suyas.
	Accu. a su,	Suyo,	Accu. a sus,	Suyos, Suyas.

I proceed with the examples of all the Pronounes following by declining them because as I before saide: it is one of the difficultest things in the tong to haue the true use of them, and whereby a stranger or the unlearned in his speche or writing, shall soonest discouer himselfe to the naturall or learned in the tong. Wherefore let not onely the young learner, but also the English, be well groundid, and those that are able to discourse and write the tong well, obserue how and when these Pronounes following (so little differing the one from the other) are to be vsed in their due time and place, as followeth:

These two, Este and Aquelte, doe signifie vnto vs any thing that is neare vs, in that signification as the Latin *Hic, he, hoc*: in Italian *Coste, Coste, Costo, Costo, Costo*: in French, *Cest, cest, cest, cest, cest*: in English, this heire, of this man heire. They do differ thus.

Este and Aquelte, in Latin, *Hic*, is he, or that which is neare or next to me.

Este, in Latin, *Hic*, he, or that which is neare or next to me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, is he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me neare, but a part from me.

Aquelte, in Latin, *ille*, he, or that which is neither by me ne

Example.

	Mascul.	Fem.	Mascul.	Fem.
Sing.	Hom. éste, ésta, éte.	éto.	Hom. étos, étas.	
	Gen. déste, désta, désto.		Gen. détos, détas.	
	Dat. para éste, para ésta, para ésto.		Dat. para étos, para étas.	
	Accus. a éste, a ésta, a ésto.		Accus. a étos, a étas.	
	Abl. déste, désta, désto.		Abl. détos, détas.	

In the singular number of this Pronoune, the first wordes in e, as éste, déste, para éste, &c. are of the Masculine gender: the second, ésta, désta, para ésta, &c. of the Feminine: the third, as éto, déto, &c. of the Neuter: but in the Plurall, the first is the Masculine & Neuter: the other the Feminine gender.

In the Genitius case, we say déste, and détos, casting away the first e. *Euphonia gratia*, that it might sound the smoother, yet one may also say, de éste, de étos.

Aquél, Aquéllo, Aquésto, declined as in the example next above, and so is, Elle, Ello: in Latin, illa, illud: the Italians and French have no proper words to expresse it, but must use circumlocution: in English, he or that, never or next to the, Misimo, Misma, Misimo, declined after the same.

Aquél, El.

Aquél, and El: in Latin, illa, illud: Italian, Quello, colui, quella, colui: French, Celuy iceluy, celle, celle, he or that which is neither near me nor thee, declined both alike.

Note that this El, a Pronoune, and El the Article doe differ in declining, specially in the plurall number. This making Ellos, and that Los, as by comparing the one with the other, the Reader may see. Look the declining of the Article El before in the Pronone.

	Mascul.	Fem.	Mascul.	Fem.
Sing.	Hom. el, élla, élo.	élo.	Hom. élos, éllas.	
	Gen. dél, d'ella, d'ello.		Gen. d'ellos, d'ellas.	
	Dat. para ella, para élo.		Dat. para élos, para éllas.	
	Acc. a ella, a élo.		Acc. a élos, a éllas.	
	Abl. d'ella, d'ello.		Abl. d'ellos, d'ellas.	

Note that the Spaniard commonly useth this Pronoune Le before a Verbe thus, Le vi- no a la memoria, it came to his memoie: Le dixo, he told him: Que del alma le salia, which came from his soule: Dar le lo, to give him that; Le respondio, he answered him.

Also the Spaniard useth this Pronoune Le loyed to the Infinitive mode of a verbe, by changing of the Infinitive into l, *Euphonia gratia*, as Hablarle, to speake unto him, Hablále: Oyile, to heare him, Oyile: Véle, to see him, Velle.

Now followeth Que, Quien, El Qual, in Latin, Qui, Qui, Quod, in Italian, Chi, Che, il Quale, La Quale, in French, Qui, Lequel, Laquelle, in English, who, which, thus.

Que, Quien.

Sing. and plural.	Hom.	Qué.
	Gen. de Qué.	
Dat. para Qué.		
Accus. a Qué.		
Ablat. de Qué.		

In this same manner is Quien declined.

El qual.

	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.		El qual.
Sing.	Hom. el qual, la qual, lo qual.				
	Gen. del qual, de la qual, de lo qual.				
	Dat. para qual, para la qual, para lo qual.				
	Accus. al qual, a la qual, a lo qual.				
	Ablat. del qual, de la qual, de lo qual.				
				Hom. los quales, las quales.	
				Gen. delos quales, de las quales.	
				Dat. para los quales, para las quales.	
				Accus. a los quales, a las quales.	
				Ablat. delos quales, de las quales.	

Of Verbes.

Verbes.

Verbe passiu.

The Spanish tongue hath the same kindes of Verbes, Modes, Conses, Numbers and Verbes as the Latine. But for the verbe passiu, they make of the verbe Soy, in Latine *Sum, et, fui*, and a participle, as Amado, Leydo, Partido, as *Soy Amado*, *Leydo Partido*, I am loued, read, parted, or with this Accumulative case or participle Se, with the third person actiu singular or plural, as Se dize, it is said, Se dizen, they are said, as hereafter in their place more at large shall be declared.

Also they haue the Gerund in Do in the same manner as the Latines, as Amando, Leyendo, Oyendo,

Oyendo, in Louing, Reading, hearing. But for the Gerund in Di and Dum of the Latine, they expesse after another manner: as Gerund in Di the same as with the Infinitive mode and the preposition De, as De amar, of Louing, De lecer, of Reading. For the Gerund in Dum, the Infinitive mode and the Preposition A, or the Indicative mode of Soy with a participle, as A amar, or Ser amado, to be Loued. A oir or Ser oydo, to be heard. A oir or Ser oydo, to be heare.

And in like manner their Supines, *Amado*, *Oyado*, *De amado*, *De oyado*.

Supines.

And for Particiles of the Active voice, *Amante*, *El que amante*.

Particiles.

For Particile of the Passive voice, *Amatus*, *Lo que es amado*.

For Particile of the Future in *Es*, *Amaturus*, *El que ha o espéra de amar*.

For Particile of the Future in *Do*, *Amandus*, *Lo que ha de ser amado*.

All which by particular examples following shall shew the more appere.

Of Conjugations.

The Spanish hath three conjugations, onely both of Verbes Regular, and Irregular.

- 1 The first endeth in ar, as Mirar, to behold: *Hablar*, to speake.
- 2 The second endeth in er, as Perder, to lose: *Caer*, to fall.
- 3 The third in er or ir, as oy to heare: *Cumplir*, to accomphish.

Tenses.

The first Person singular of the Indicative mode Present tense of all Verbes Regular, of what Conjugation soever, alwaies endeth in o, Miro, I beholde, Hablo, I speake, Pierdo, I lose: Oygo, I heare.

Indicatiue mood.

Preterimperfet of the Indicatiue, of Verbes Regular, of the seconde and thirde Conjugation, in o, ya, as Perdia, I did fall, &c. Oya, I did heare, Compila, I did accomphish, &c. And of the first Conjugation all in a, as Mirava, I did behold, Hablava, I did speake, &c. But of the first Preterimperfet in y, oy, ayo, perdí, I haue heade, I haue lost; but of the first Conjugation all in e, as Mire, I haue beholde, Hable, I haue speaken.

Second Preterimperfet of all the three Conjugations of all Verbes with this Verbe Hey, and the Participle, as He mirado, I haue beholde: He leydo, I haue read: He oydo, I haue heare.

Future of the Indicatiue of all Verbes Regular, is Irregular in e, as Hablaré, I will speake: Leyre, oyere, haré, podré, sabré, Daré, &c.

The Terminations of Verbs thus varied as followeth.

Guerie	Imperfect of the Indicatiue of the seconde and thirde Conjugation thus varied.	fa, ias, ia, os, iades, ian,	ya, yas, yas, yamos, yades, yan,	Perdia, Perdias, Perdias, Perdiamos, Perdiades, Perdian,	oyá, oyas, oyas, oyamos, oyades, oyan.
	Imperfect of the Indicatiue of the first Conjugation, in a, ávas, áva: ávamos, áblavas.	áyades, ávan, ábavas,	áyadas, ávavas, ábavadas,	áyadas, ávadas, áyan,	áyadas, ávadas, áyan.

Guerie	Future of the Indicatiue of all Verbes of all Conjugations.	ré, rás, rá, remos, rémos,	ob fis, seconde; sár, hablare, by adding e long and third, Con- er, perderé, or accent to the conjugation in ir, oyére, Ir, in, morder.
		ré, rás, rá, remos, rémos,	

The Terminations of the Optative and Subiunctive:

Querie	Present Tense of the Optative and Subiunctive of Verbes of the first Coniugation thus, by changing o, of the Indicative Present tense into e, thus,	e,	háble,
		es,	hábles,
Querie	Present of the Optative and Subiunctive of the seconde and thirde Coniugation, by chaunging o, of the Present of the Indicative into a, thus,	e,	háble,
		émos,	háblemos,
Querie	Present of the Optative and Subiunctive of the seconde and thirde Coniugation, by chaunging o, of the Present of the Indicative into a, thus,	éys,	hábleys,
		en,	háblen.
Querie	Present of the Optative and Subiunctive of the seconde and thirde Coniugation, by chaunging o, of the Present of the Indicative into a, thus,	a,	perda,
		as,	perdas,
Querie	Present of the Optative and Subiunctive of the seconde and thirde Coniugation, by chaunging o, of the Present of the Indicative into a, thus,	a,	perdá,
		ámos,	perdámos,
Querie	Present of the Optative and Subiunctive of the seconde and thirde Coniugation, by chaunging o, of the Present of the Indicative into a, thus,	áys,	perdáys,
		án,	perdán,
Querie	Prestemper of the Optative and Subiunctive of the seconde and thirde Coniugation, thus,	ára, ria, ásse,	hablára, habrária, hablásse,
		áras, rias, ásses,	habláras, habrárias, hablásses,
Querie	Verbes of the first Coniugation thus,	ára, ria, ásse,	hablára, habrária, hablásse,
		áramos, riamos, ássemos,	habláramos, habráriamos, hablássemos,
Querie	Verbes of the second and thirde Coniug. thus,	ára, ria, ásse,	hablára, habrária, hablásse,
		ára, ria, ásse,	hablára, habrária, hablásse,
Querie	Verbes of the second and thirde Coniug. thus,	éra, ría, ésse,	perdiéra, perdería, perdiéssse,
		éras, rías, ésses,	perdiéras, perderías, perdiéssses,
Querie	Verbes of the second and thirde Coniug. thus,	éra, ría, ésse,	perdiéra, perdería, perdiéssses,
		éramos, riamos, éssemos,	perdiéramos, perderíamos, perdiéssemos,
Querie	Verbes of the second and thirde Coniug. thus,	éra, ría, ésse,	perdiéras, perderías, perdiéssses,
		éra, ría, ésse,	perdiéras, perderías, perdiéssses,
Querie	Verbes of the second and thirde Coniug. thus,	éra, ría, ésse,	perdiéras, perderías, perdiéssses,
		éramos, riamos, éssemos,	perdiéramos, perderíamos, perdiéssemos,
Querie	Verbes of the second and thirde Coniug. thus,	éra, ría, ésse,	perdiéras, perderías, perdiéssses,
		éra, ría, ésse,	perdiéras, perderías, perdiéssses,
Querie	Verbes of the second and thirde Coniug. thus,	éra, ría, ésse,	perdiéras, perderías, perdiéssses,
		éra, ría, ésse,	perdiéras, perderías, perdiéssses,

And these Prestemper Tenses as all other of what Coniugation soever of Verbes Regular and Irregular, forme two boites of themselves of the seconde person singular of the first Prestemper Tense of the Indicative mode, by taking awaie Sie, and by making it in the first Coniugation, ára, and ásse, as of this seconde person of the Prestemper of the Indicative singular, Revelára, commeth the Prestemper of the Optative, and Subiunctive Revelára, Revelásse, and of the second and thirde Coniugation of all Verbes Regular and Irregular, by changing that se into éra and ésse, as of this Indicative mode entendíre, commeth the Prestemper imperfect of the Optative and Subiunctive, entendéra, entendéssse, of oyste, commeth oyéra, oyéssse: of diste, diéra, diéssse: of chuviste, chuvíera, chuvíssse: of anduviste, anduvíera, anduvíssse: of pudiste, pudíera, pudíssse. And they forme the thirde boite of this Prestemper imperfect by putting to in, to the Infinitive mode, as of the Infinitive revelar, commeth this Prestemper imperfect revelaria, of the Infinitive entender, entenderia, of oy, oyía, of dár, daría, of éclar, éclaría, andá, andaría.

Querie	Future of the Optative and Subiunctive of verbes of the first coniugation, thus	áre,	Habláre.
		áres,	Habláres.
Querie	Future of the Optative and Subiunctive of verbes of the first coniugation, thus	áre,	Habláre.
		áremos,	Habláremos.
Querie	Future of the second & third Coniugation of the Opt. and Subiunctive, thus	ére,	Perdiére.
		éres,	Oyére.
Querie	Future of the second & third Coniugation of the Opt. and Subiunctive, thus	ére,	Perdiéres.
		éres,	Oyéres.
Querie	Future of the second & third Coniugation of the Opt. and Subiunctive, thus	ére,	Perdiére.
		éres,	Oyére.
Querie	Future of the second & third Coniugation of the Opt. and Subiunctive, thus	éremos,	Perdiéremos.
		éredes,	Oyéremos.
Querie	Future of the second & third Coniugation of the Opt. and Subiunctive, thus	éren.	Perdiéredes.
		éren.	Oyéredes.
Querie	Future of the second & third Coniugation of the Opt. and Subiunctive, thus	éremos,	Perdiéren.
		éredes,	Oyéren.

Now it remaineth to give a Paradigma or example of every Coniugation of their Modes, Tenses, Numbers and Persons, that the Student in the tongue may forme the rest by, which is the chiefest point of this our Grammar, and without the which the learner shall never be able to write or speake but by aime and rote, and so be discouraged from so laudable a purpose.

Ind

And for the better delight of the Reader, and for the amittie of these two tongues, as for why the Italian the pleasure and profit he may reape hereby, I haue here in the Examples following, set downe added to the Italian, that the vnderstander of both tongues, may with one laboure (and yet at his ease) verbes follow for the difference, the one from the other, and be hereby able in understanding, writing and spea- king, to practise either of them, without using the one for the other, or mistaking them, (a thing offendous to the Spaniards nature, as all know who haue travelled in Spaine.) For euen as two things very like one to the other, if you see them at divers times, and in divers places, may easily make one miscarrie his memorie, and mistake the one for the other, when you see either of them againe by it selfe:

So if you see them both at one time, and in one place together, and take good heede of them by comparing them: no doubt by one marke or other, you shall euer after be able to discerne, know and call them: even so these two languages (sometime altogether so like) being thus laid together, will cause the Reader easily to discerne and remember them.

Avér and Sér.

And because this verbe Avér, in Latine Habere, in Italian Hauere, in French Avoir, in English to Haue, and Sér, in Latine Esse, Italian Essere, French Esre, English to Be, doth serue to the coniugating or declining of all other verbes: They are best in my opinion fit to be declined, especially this verbe Avér, which may fitly be called Verbum auxiliarium, a helpfull verbe, because he doth not onely helpe to decline himselfe in his owne prestemper and prestemperperfect, but doth serue to decline all other verbes whatsoeuer in the same tenses, as by the Examples following you may see. And this verbe Sér, as before serueth, as in the Italian and French to decline all verbes Passives, for without it neither the Spanish, Italian or French can forme or decline their Passives, as following you may perceiue.

Avér and Sér.

The

AVE R
declined.

*The declining of the first Auxiliar verbe Avér, in Italian.
Hauere, in Latin Habere, in English to Have.*

Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	Yo HE, Tu ás, Aquel óz há.	Io Ho & Haggio, Poeticall. tu Hai, cului há, & haué, Poeticall.	Ego HABEO, tu Habet, ille Habet.	I Hauere. thou Hast. he hath.
Plural.	nosotros Avémos o2 Hémos vosotros Avéys. aquellos án o2 hán.	Noi habbiámo & hauémo, roi Hauéte, colóro Hánno.	Nos Habemus, ros Habetis, illi Habent.	Plural. we Hauere. ye Hauere. they Hauere.
Imper. sec.	Avia, Avias, Avia. Piar. Aviamos, Aviares, Avian.	Hauéna & Hauéa, Hauéa, Hauéa & Hauéa. Piar. Hauéamo & hauéamo, Hauéate, Hauéano & hauéano.	Habebam, habebas, habebat, &c.	I hab. thou habest, &c.
1. First preter- perfect	úve, uviste, úvo o2 huyo o2 óvo,	Hébbi, hauésti, hébbe.	Habui, habuisti, &c.	I hauere hab, &c.
2. Secod perfect	Uvimos, uvistes, Uviéron o2 huiéron o2 ovi-	Hauémmo, hauéste, hébbero.		
3. Pluper- fect tese	yo He, tu ás, aquel óz ha. nosotros hénos o2 avémos, vosotros aveýs, aquellos án o2 hán.	Io Ho, tu hai, cului ha, noi habbiámo, roi Hauéte, colóro hanno.	Habui, habuisti, &c. hauéto	I hauere had, &c.
Futur.	Avia, avias, avia. Aviamos, Aviares, Avian.	Hauéa, hauéa, hauéua.	Habueram, &c.	I had had, &c.
	Avré, Avras, Avrá. Avrémos, Avreyés, Avran.	Haueró, hauró & haró, hauerá, haurá & hará, hauerá, haurá & hará. Hauerímo, haurémo & harémo, haueréte, haueréte & haréte, haueránno, haueráno & haráno.	Habubo, &c.	I shall o2 wili hauere, &c.
	áya tu, áya aquel, rabi uñat, saluñas, lora díñas, lora ayámos nosotros, ayáys, volótos, haué, áyan aquéllos.	Habbiu, habbi colui, habbi amo, habbi amo roi, habbi amo colóro.	Habebeto, &c.	Hauere thou, &c.

Imperative mode.

The Spaniards use in steede of this Imperative mode, this word Ten of Tengo,
I hold: which Tengo is often used of them for this verbe He.

This

Declining of Verbes.

AVE R
declined.

This Imperative mode, Ten of Tengo, so commonly used for áyas, áya, is thus declined:

Tén tu.	Hold thou.
Ténga aquel.	Hold him.
ordinarily used for the Imperat. of AVER, to Hauere.	Hold we, or let us Hold.
Tened volótos.	Hold ye.
Téngan aquéllos.	Hold they, or let them Hold.

The Optative mode is used with these signes, Oxala, or else Os, or Pluguiese a Dios: in Latin, Vinam: in Italian, O Dio voglia, O che, Dio vollesche, O Dio che: French, Dieu veuille, Plaist a Dieu: English, would to God, I pray God, God graunt. The Potential like the Latin, with these signes, May, can, might, would, Should, & ought: both declined like the Subiunctives following: but that the Optative and Potential always make their future tense and Present tense alike, as Oxala yo áya, I pray God I have, so in the future; Oxala yo áya, I pray God I hauere hereafter: Oxala yo Révèle, God graunt I reveale: Future tense also; Oxala yo Révèle, God graunt I reveale hereafter: and so of the rest.

And because the Optative and Potential have their future tenses alone with their Present: and the Subiunctive hath two futures, and both differing from the Present, I hold it needfull to decline the Subiunctive, by whom the other two are framed.

Subiunctive mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.
	áya, áyas, áya.	Hábia, Hábbi, Hábbia.	Habeam, Habebas, &c.
Pres. Como.	ayámos, ayáys, áyan.	Quando Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano.	When I had, when thou hadst, &c.
		Cum	

auria deuotat
Huius michti
Uuicira tempus
Huius michti
impert.
Uuicira tempus
futurum.

auria, uvíera, uvíesse, aurias, uvíeras, uvíesses, áuria, uvíera, uvíesse.	Quando auríamos, uvíeramos, uvíessemos, auríades, uvírades, uvíesedes, aurian, uvíeran, uvíessen.	Cum haueré, hauerá, hauerá, haueréte, haueráte, hauerá. hauerémo, hauerémo, hauerémo, haueréte, haueréte, haueréte, hauerébbo, hauerébbo, hauerébbo.
----------------------------------------------------------------------------------	------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

Or decline with H. Huiuera, Huiuésse, o2 Oviéra, Oviéssse.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.
Perfect. Como	áya, áyas, áya.	Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia.	Habuerim, &c.
	avido. Quando ayámos, ayáys, áyan.	avido. Quando habbiámo, habbiáte, hábbiano.	When I hauere had, &c.

6. Supra.

uvíera, o2 uvíesse, uvíeras, o2 uvíelles, uvíero, o2 uvíesse.	avido. Quando uvíeramos, o2 uvíessemos, uvíerades, o2 uvíesedes, uvíeran, o2 uvíessen.	Cum haueré, hauerá, hauerá, haueréte, haueráte, hauerá. hauerémo, hauerémo, hauerémo, haueréte, haueréte, haueréte, hauerébbo, hauerébbo, hauerébbo.
---------------------------------------------------------------------	-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.
First Future. Como	áya tu, áya aquel, rabi uñat, saluñas, lora díñas, lora ayámos nosotros, ayáys, volótos, haué, áyan aquéllos.	Habbiu, habbi colui, habbi amo, habbi amo roi, habbi amo colóro.	Habuero, &c.
	Obando uvíeremos, uvíeredes, uvíeren.	Obando hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno.	When I shall hauere here- after, &c.

Second

*The declining of the first Auxiliar verbe Aver, in Italian
Hanere, in Latin Habere, in English to Have.*

Indicative mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.
Yo Hé, Tu ás, Aquel ás hás.	Io Ho & Haggio, Poeticall. tu Hai, culuihá, & hâne, Poetical.	Ego HABEO, tu Habes, ille Habet.
Pref. nosotros Avémos ož Hémos vosotros Avéys. aquellos án ož hán.	Plural. Nei habbiámo & hauémo, voi Hauéte, colóro Hánno.	Plural. Nos Habemus, voi Habetis, illi Habent.
Imper. lett. Avia, Avias, Avia. Plur. Aviamos, Aviades, Avian.	Hauéna & Hauéa, Hauéui, Hauéna & Hauéa. Plur. Hauéuámō & hauéuámō, Hauéuáte, Hauéuano & hauéuano.	Habebam, habebas, habebat, &c.
First preter- perfect	úve, uvífe, úvo ož húvo ož óvo,	Habui, habuisti, &c.
Uvimos, uvistes, Uviéron ož huviéron ož ovi-	Hauémmo, hauéste, hébbero.	I have had, &c.
Second perfect.	yo Hé, tu ás, aquel á ož ha.	Io Ho, tu hai, coluihá,
nosotros hémos ož avémos, vosotros aveýs, aquellos án ož hán.	Avido	hauémo noi habbiámo, voi hauéte, colóro hanno.
pluper- fect telle	Avia, avías, avía. Aviamos, aviades, avian.	Hauéua, hauéui, hauéua.
Avré, Avrás, Avrá. Avrémos, Avréys, Avrán.	Avido	hauéuámō, hauéuáte, hauéuano.
Futur.	Hauró, hauró & haró, hauerdi, haurá & hará, hauerá, haurá & hará.	Habebó, &c.
2. futur.	Hauerémo, hauerémo & harémo, haueréte, haueréte & haréte, hauerámmo, hauerámmo & harámmo.	I shall ož will have, &c.
	Imperative mode.	
avánu, áya aquel, avámos nosóros, avámos vosóros, aván aquéllos.	Habbi tu, habbi colui, habbi moi, habbi voi, habbi colui.	Hab, habeo, &c.
	Imperative mode.	

The Augmentation of the Forces of the Commonwealth, after the Fall of Tuppence: when the Troops were sent to the South, to support the Duke of Monmouth.

This Imperative mode, Ten of Tengo, so commonly used for áyas, áya, is thus declined: AV

The Imperative of Tenér, ordinarily used for the Imperative of A V E R, to Haue.	Tén tu. Téngá aquel. Téngámos nolrótos, Téned volróros. Téngan aquéllos.	Hold thou. let him Hold. Hold we, or let us Hold. Hold you, or let you Hold. Hold they, or let them Hold.
-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

The Optative mode is used with these signes; Oxalá, ouelle Où, ou Pluviéssé a Dios: in Latin, Viam: in Italian, O Dio voglia, O che, Dio voleste che, O Dio che: French, Dieu v'euille, Pleust a Dieu: English, would to God, I pray God, God graunt. The Potential like the Latin, with these signes, May, can, might, would, Should, or ought: both declined like the Subjunctives following: but that the Optative and Potential always make their Future tense and Present tense alike, as Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I haue: so in the Future, Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I haue hereafter: Oxalá yo Revele, God graunt I reueale: Future tense also; Oxalá yo Revele, God graunt I reueale hereafter: and so of the rest.

And because the Optative and Potential have future tenses at one with their Present: and the Subjunctive hath two futures, and both differing from the Present, I hold it needful to decline the Subjunctive, by whom the other two are framed.

Subiunctiue mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	Latin.
áya,	Hábbia,	Habem,	Whén I Had.
áyas,	Hábbi,	Habes,&c.	Whén thou Had'st &c.
aya,	Hábbia.		
Des.	Quando.	Cum-	<i>Augus</i> <i>yo le</i> <i>the day</i> <i>april in</i>
Como.			
ayámos,	Habbiámo,		
ayáis;	Habbiáte,		
áyan,	Habbiáno.		

auria denotat
tempus in aucto
Univera tempus
tempus vix Imperf.
patribus Comio
Univera tempus
saturni.

áya,	habbi
áyes, <i>áyos</i>	habbá
áya,	hábul
áyido. <i>Quando</i>	
ayámos,	habbi
ayáys,	habbi
ávan	hábbi

uviera, oz uvieffe, uvieras, oz uvientes, uviera, oz uvieffe.	hauessi, hauéfisi, haueffe.	habuiffem, habuiffem, habuiffem,
avido. Quando	hauéfimo, hauéfes, hauéfem.	habuiffem, habuiffem, habuiffem,
Como	uvieramos, oz uvieffemos, uvierades, oz uvientesdes, uvieran, oz uvientes.	habuiffem, habuiffem, habuiffem,

First Future Como	uvière, uvières, uvière.	hauero, hauerás, hauero.	habero, et.	Soñar. A shall have here- after, etc.
	uvirémos, uvirédes, uvirémon.	haueremos, hauerásdes, haueremos.		

es le futur

24

Declining of Verbs

Second Future Como	auré, aurás, aurá, aurémos, auréys, aurán.	avido. Q. sande	haueré, haueridis, hauerid. hauerémo, haueréys, haueráno.	hauerere, et.	when I shall have been ter, et.
			haueréto. Cum		

Infinitive mode Present tens

AVER,]	Hauere,]	Haber,]	to Hane.
Avér avido,]	Hauer hauito,]	Habuiss,]	Peter perfect tense to Hane had.
Espéro de avér,	{ Dauer hauere, } Effer per hauser,	Habituuisse,]	The future tense to Hane hereafter.
Aviendo,]		Gerund	
Avido,]	Hauendo,]	Habendo,]	In Hening.
	Participle		
	Hauuto,]	Habitus,]	Had.
	Participle of the future tense		

El que espéra de avér,] *Essere per hauere.*] *Habiturus,*] to have hereafter.
other verbum Auxiliarum Sér, with which all Passives are declined.

SER

Infinitive mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	1 Am, thou Art, he Is, &c.
Yo SO Y, tu éres, aquéél és.	Io SONO, tu séi, colui é.	Sum, es, est.	
Pref.	Plu.	Plu.	
nosotros Sómos, vostros sóys, aquéllos són.	Noi siamo, voi siete, coloro sóno.	Sumus, sunt, sunt.	
éra, éras, éra,	éra, éris, éra.	eram, eras, &c.	1 was, &c.
Imperfect.			
éramos, érades, éran.	erámo, & erauamo, erauáte, éran.		
First Preter- perfect.	Fui, fuiñe, Fúe.	Fui, fostí, fú.	Fui, &c.
	Fuimos, fuiñes, fueron.	Fuimo, & foste, fúrono, & fúro.	I have been, &c.
Second Preter- perfect.	He, oí uve, ás, oí uvíse, á, oí úvo.	Síno, séi, " " " " "	Fui, &c.
	Avémos, oí uvímos, auéys, oí uvístes, án, oí uvíeron.	Statio, Stámo, & síte, & síno.	I have been, &c.
Plu- perfect.	Avías, avías, avía.	éra, éris, éra.	Fueram, &c.
	Sído.	Stato.	I had been, &c.
		Stati.	
	erauamo, erauáte, éran.	Stati.	

Digitized by srujanika@gmail.com

Sar, or sia,
Sordi,
Sord e sia.

Saremo,
Sarete,
Saranno.

Imperialisme

Sij, sij, & sijew, sij, & sijewalij,	Sij, sij, & sijew, sij, & sijewalij,	Be thou, Be he or let him be,
Siamo noi, state roki, siamo coloro,	Siamo, siamo coloro, siamo coloro,	

Substitutione nomine.

<p>Italian</p> <p><i>Io S'IA,</i> <i>tu si, sia,</i> <i>colui sia, sei,</i></p> <p>Quando</p> <p><i>siamo,</i> <i>siate,</i> <i>siamo, & siamo.</i></p>	<p>Cum</p> <p><i>servi suffi, suffi,</i> <i>servi suffi suffi suffi,</i> <i>servi suffi suffi suffi suffi,</i> <i>servi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi,</i></p>	<p>Cum</p> <p><i>servi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi,</i> <i>servi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi,</i> <i>servi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi,</i> <i>servi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi suffi,</i></p>
<p>Latin</p> <p><i>sim,</i> <i>si, &c.</i></p>	<p>Cum</p> <p><i>affissi,</i> <i>affissi,</i></p>	<p>when I am, &c.</p> <p>when I stand.</p>

Quando sarà 1
saranno 1

Sardes. *Brast.* 23125723
Carabao. *Brast.* 23125724

second futur. Como	avré, avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás,	Sido. Quando,	avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás,	avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás,	state. Cum avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás, avrás,	fuero, fuero, fuero, fuero, fuero, fuero, fuero,	soyent be, etc.
--------------------------	-------------------------------------------------------------------	---------------	--------------------------------------------------------------------	--------------------------------------------------------------------	----------------------------------------------------------------------------------	--------------------------------------------------------------------	--------------------

Infinitive mode, Present Tense

S E R ,]	<i>Effere,]</i>	<i>Effe,]</i>	<i>Cōbe.</i>
A V E R fido,]	<i>Effer fido,]</i>	<i>Effeterperfect and fidesuperlat.</i>	
A U ē r	<i>{ dauer effere,</i>	<i>{ fore,</i>	<i>To be here-</i>
d e s ē r ,	<i>{ haner ad effere,</i>	<i>{ futurum esse,]</i>	<i>after.</i>
S i é n d o ,]	<i>Effendo,]</i>	<i>Gerund.</i>	
S I ' D O]	<i>stato,]</i>	<i>Participle.</i>	
		<i>being</i>	

An Example of the first Conjugation of Verbes Regular in
AR, as Revelár] in Italian *Riveláre*] Latin *Rivelare*]
in English to Reveal or discover, as Revelár,
in Spanish to also to Reveal or reveal.

Spanish.		Italian.	Latine.
Piel.	yo R E V E L O, tu Revélas, aquél revéla, revelámos, revelás, Revelán.	10 R I V E L O, tu rivélo, colái revéla, rivélaímo, rivélaíte, rivélaímo,	Revélo, revéla, revéla, &c.
Imper. fect.	reveláva, revelávas, reveláva, revelávamos, revelávades, revelávan,	rivélaíva, rivélaíva, rivélaíva, rivélaívamo, rivélaívate, rivélaívamo,	revelabam, &c. I did reveal
First Perf.	revélo, revélaíste, revélo, revelámos, revelástes, reveláron,	rivélo, rivélaíste, rivélo, rivélaímmo, rivélaíste, rivélaírón, rivélaíron, rivélaíro, rivélaíre.	revélaí, &c. I have reveal ed, &c.

Second Perf.	hé, op, úve, ás, op, uviste, á, op, úvo, avémos, op, uvímos avéys, op, uvistés, án, op, uvíeron,	revelado.	bo há, há, habbiámo, habbiáte, hámo,	riueláto	renelau, &c.	I have renewa- led, &c.
Plu- perfect.	avía, avías, avía, avíamos, avíades, avían,	revelado.	hauéua, hauéui, hauéua, hauenámo, hauenáte, hauenámo,	riueláto	renelaueram, &c.	I had renewa- led, &c.
futur.	revelaré, revelarás, revelará, revelarémos, revelaréys, revelarárn,		riuelaré, riuelarái, riuelará, riuelarémo, riuelaréte, riuelarémo,	riuelabo	, &c.	I shall or will reneweal, &c.

Often times for the Future of this Indicative Mode, as well of this first Conjugation, as of all the rest, is used the Infinitive Mode, and the Present tense of the Verbe Aver, with a Noun, Participle going between them, as Revelar lo hé, Revelar lo has, Revelar lo á. And so of the other Conjugations, as Entender lo he, Entender lo á, ovr lo hé, ovr lo has, &c.

Imperative mode.

revéla tu,	riuelat _u ,	reueela, reuelato	Reueale thou,
revéle aquél _o ,	riueli coló _u ,	reueles, reuelato	hee thou reuealed, &c.
Pis.			
revélemos nosotros,	riuelám _o noi,	reuelemus,	
reuelád vosotros,	riuelat _e voi,	reuelain _s ,	
revélan aquéllos,	riuelímo coló _u ,	reuelent,	

Subjunctive mode with signs, Si, Como, & other Conjunctions

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	Reuel, &c.	When I doe Reueale, &c.
Yo Revéle, tu Revéles, aquel Revéle.	Io Rivel, tu Rivello, aquel Rivello.	Reuel, Rivello, Rivello.	Reuel, &c.	When I doe Reueale, &c.
Pres. Como	Dirall.	Quando	Dirall.	Com
Revelémos, Reveléys, Revelén.	Riveliamo, Rivelate, Rivellino.	Riveliamo, Rivelate, Rivellino.	Riveliamo, Rivelate, Rivellino.	Riveliamo, Rivelate, Rivellino.

Revelára, revelaría, revelássse, Reveláras, revelarias, revelássses, Revelára, revelaría, revelássse;	Rivelassi, rivelaréi, rivelaria, Rivelásti, rivelaresti, Rivelasse, rivelarebó, rivelaria,	Rivelarem, etc.	When I did Reveale, &c.
Quando Como Reveláramos, reveláriámos, revelásssemos Revelárades, reveláriades, revelássedes, Reveláram, revelárian, revelássen,	Rivelassimo, rivelarémmo, Rivelaste, rivelareste, Rivelassero, rivelarebbono, rivelariano	Cum	

Declining of Verbes.

Infinitive mode Present tense.

Revelár,] Rivelare,] Revelare,] to Beneale oz discouer.
Reverentefest tensa.

Aver revelado,] Hauér rivelato,] Reuelanisse,] to have Revealed.
The future tense.

Auér o Esperár
de Revelár, { *Douer Ruelare, Essere per* } to Remeale
Ruelare, *Hauer a Ruelare, S* hereafter.
Remeale

Revelando,] Ruelando,] Reuelando,] in Revealing.
Sunrise of the Marine Civilization

a Revelár,] Signifying the 2d ^{2d} Signification. a Ruelare,] Ruelatum] to be about to Beneale.

De scribent] *De scribent* or the *Present* conjugation.
De scribent] *De scribent* *Rivelato*] *Rivelato*] to be *Revealed*.
Participle of the *Present* tense and *Active* voice.

Participle of the Present tense and Active voice
El que Revela,] Rivelante,] Revelans,] Revelante

Revelado] Rivelato,] Revelatus,] Revealed.
All verbes which haue their infinitives in A R are declined in all mān-

here declined, except the Irregulars here following in ar.

All verbs which have their Infinitives in A R, are declined in all points like this
here declined, except the Irregulars here following in ar.

Declining of Verbes.

An Example of the second Conjugation of verbs

Regular in ER, as Entendér, in Italian Intendere,
Latin Intelligere, to understand.

Judicative mode.

Spanish.	Italian:	Latin:
yo ENTIENDO, tu Entiendes, aquel Entiende.	<i>Io Intendo,</i> <i>tu Inténdi,</i> <i>colui Inténde.</i>	<i>Intelligo, &c.</i>
Plurall.	<i>Vine.</i>	<i>I do Under- stand, &c.</i>
Entendemos, Enténdey's, Entienden.	<i>Inténdiamo,</i> <i>Inténdete,</i> <i>Inténdino.</i>	
Imper. fect.	<i>Intendéa & Intendéa.</i> <i>Inténdui,</i> <i>Intendéa & Intendéa,</i>	<i>Intelligebam, &c.</i>
Entendíamos, Entendíades, Entendian.	<i>Intendéamo,</i> <i>Intendéuite,</i> <i>Intendéuano.</i>	<i>I did Under- stand, &c.</i>
first perfect.	<i>Intési,</i> <i>Intendistì,</i> <i>Intése,</i>	<i>Intellexi, &c.</i>
Entendimos, Entendistes, Entendieron.	<i>Intendémmo,</i> <i>Intendéste,</i> <i>Intésero.</i>	<i>I have Un- derstood, &c.</i>
Second perfect.	<i>HO</i> <i>hái</i> <i>ha</i>	<i>Intégo.</i>
hemos oír uvímos, avéys oír uvíftes, án oír uvíeron.	<i>habbiámo</i> <i>hauíste</i> <i>hánnó</i>	<i>Intési.</i>
Super- erfect.	<i>hauéua</i> <i>hauéui</i> <i>hauéua</i>	<i>Intellexeram, &c.</i>
Avíamos, aviades, avían.	<i>hauéuamo</i> <i>hauéuáte</i> <i>hauéusano</i>	<i>I had Un- derstood, &c.</i>
Futur.	<i>Intenderé,</i> <i>Entenderás,</i> <i>Entenderá.</i>	<i>Intelligam, &c.</i>
Entenderemos, Entenderéys, Entenderán.	<i>Intenderemo,</i> <i>Intenderete,</i> <i>Intenderánno.</i>	<i>I shall or will Understand.</i>

Imperative mode.

Entiende tu, Entiende aquél.	Intendi tu, Intienda colui,	Intellige, Intelligito, Intelligat, Intelligito.	Understand thou, Understand he or let him understand.
Entendámos nosotros, Entendémos vosotros, Entiéndanlos aquellos,	Intendámoslo nos, Intendémoslo vos, Intiendanlos colo.		

Declining of Verbes.

O Y R
The Third and last Conjugation of verbes Regular in IR, and YR.
declined. Subjunctive mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres. Como.	O Y A, oyga, oyas, oygas, oya, oyga, oyámos, oygámos, oyiys, oygáys, oyan, oygan.	O D'A, ádi, áda, validimo, validite, ódano.	Audiam, &c. Cum	When I hear.
Imper. Como	Oyerá, oyería, oyéste, oyéras, oyerías, oyéste, oyera, oyería, oyéste, oyéramos, oyriamos, oyésemos, oyérades, oyriades, oyéfades, oyérano, oyrian, oyéßen.	Quando, Vdissi, vdiréi, vdería, vdirissi, vdiréste, vdirisse, vdirébbo, vdiráno.	Audirem, &c. Cum	When I did hear, etc.
Perfect. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan.	Habbiá, habbi, habbia. habbiámo, habbiáte, habbiano.	Audire- rim, &c. Vdito. Cum	when I have heard, etc.
Imper. Como	Uviére, oyviéste, uviéras, oyviéste, uviéra, oyviéste, uviéramos, oyviésemos, uviérades, oyviéfades, uviéran, oyviéßen.	Quando, Hauéssi, haueréi, hauería, hauéssi, hauerésti, hauéssi, hauerébbo, haueráno, hauéssimo, hauerémo, hauéste, haueréste, hauéffero, hauerébbo, haueráno.	Cum Audiu- issem &c. Vdito.	When I had heard, etc.
First Future. Como	Oyére, oyéres, oyére, oyéremos, oyéredes, oyéren.	Cum	Audiiero, &c.	When I shall hear, etc.
Second Future. Como	Uviére, oyviére, uviéres, oyviéras, uviére, oyviéra, uviéremos, oyviémos, uviéredes, oyviéys, uviéren, oyviéran.	oydo. Quádo Haueró, hauerá, hauerá. hauerémo, haueréte, haueráno.	Cum Audiuero, &c. Vdito.	When I shall hear.

Infinitive mode present tense

O Y R,]	Vdive,]	Audire,]	to Hear.
avér Oydo]	hauer Vdito,]	Audiuissi,]	to have Heard.
	The Future tense		
avér de Oyf,]	dover Vaire,]	Auditum effi,]	to Hear hereafter.
	hauer ad Vdise,]		
	offer per Vdise,]		

Declining of Verbes Passives.

Gerund.		
Oyéndo,]	Audiendo,]	In Hearing.
a Oy,]	Audiendo,]	Hypine of the Future voice.
desir Oydo,]	Audiendo,]	to Hear.
el que Oye,]	Audiendo,]	Hypine of the Passive voice.
en Oye,]	Audiendo,]	to be Heard.
Oydo,]	Audiendo,]	Participle of the Passive voice and Future tense.
	Audiendo,]	Hearing.
	Audiendo,]	Participle of the Passive voice and Future tense.
	Audiendo,]	Heard.

All verbes whose Infinitives end in ir, or yr, are declined in *euera* respect like this: except those in ir and yr, in the Irregulars following.

Of Verbes Passives.

The Spaniards as the Italian and French decline their Verbes passives with their Verbe *Soy, o, m.*, and the Participle of the Future tense, as of *Revelar*, to reveal; for *Revelado*, I am revealed.

The Spanish formeth the Participle Passive of the first and third Conjugation of their Infinitive mode, by taking away r, and putting to do, as of *Revelar*, *Revelado*, *Pedir*, to require, *Pedido*, required, *Oy*, to hear, *Oydo*, heard.

But in the second Conjugation they take away r as before, and change the last y, or i, and add to do as aforesaid, as *Leer*, to read, *Leido*; *Entender*, to understand, *Entendido*.

A Verbe Passive thus declined.

Indicative mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
YO SOY, tu eres, aquéles, Plu.	Io SO'NO, tu sei, colisi, Plu.	Revelor, Revelari, &c.	I am Revealed, thou art Revealed.
Pres.	Revelado.	Revelato.	
Imper. etc.	Reveládo.	Revelato.	
First perfect.	E'ra, erás, erás, Revelado.	E'ra, erás, erás, Revelato.	Revelab, Revelabas, &c.
Second perfect.	eramos, erádes, erán, Revelados.	eramos, & eranámo, eráte, erán, Reveláti.	Revelab, Revelabas, &c.
First perfect.	E'ra, erás, erás, Revelado.	E'ra, erás, erás, Revelato.	Revelab, Revelabas, &c.
Second perfect.	eramos, erádes, erán, Revelados.	eramos, & eranámo, eráte, erán, Reveláti.	Revelab, Revelabas, &c.
Gerund.			

Declining of Verbes Passiues.

pluperfect.	Avia avias avian	Sido, Sido, Sido,	Revelado, Revelados, Revelados.	Era éri eraúmo	Stato, Stato, Stato,	Rivelato. Rivelato. Rivelato.	Reuelatus eram rel fueram, &c.	I had been Reuealed, &c.	
future	Seré, serás, será,	Revelado.	Saró, sará, sará,	Revelato.	Rivelato.	Reuelabor, &c.	I shall be, will be Reuealed.		
Imper.	Scrémos, seréys, serán,	Revelados.	Sarémo, saréte, saránno,	Revelato.	Rivelato.	Reuelare,	be thou Reuealed, led, let him be Reuealed, &c.		
Pres.	Sétu, sea aquél, Seámos, séd, Séan,	Revelado.	Sia, & si tu, sia, & si colui, siam, siáte, siano,	Revelato.	Rivelato.	Reuelare, Reuelatur, &c.	be thou Reuealed, led, let him be Reuealed, &c.		
Imper. fect	Como Fuéras, serías, fuéste fuéras, serías, fuéste fuéra, sería, fuéste	Revelado.	Póssi, fuéssi, saréi, saria fuéssi, fuéssi, saréisti, fuéssi, fuéssi, sarébba, saria.	Revelato.	Rivelato.	Reuelarer, &c.	When I was Reuealed, &c.		
Imper. fect	Como Fuéramos, seríamos, fuésemos fuéramos, seríadas, fuéssedes fuéran, serían, fuéssen	Revelados.	Póssimo, fuéssimo, sarémmo fuéssimo, fuéssimo, saréisti, fuéssimo, fuéssimo, sarébbo, saria.	Revelados.	Rivelato.	Reuelarer, &c.	When I was Reuealed, &c.		
perfect	Como ayás Sido áya Sido	Reuelado.	Sia Stato siá & si Stato siá & si Stato	Revelato.	Rivelato.	Reuelatus sim rel fuerim, &c.	When I have been reuealed, led, &c.		
pluperfect	Como uviéras ozi uviéste uviéras ozi uviéste uviéra ozi uviéste	Revelado.	Póssi, fuéssi, saréi, saria Stato fuéssi, fuéssi, saréisti, Stato fuéssi, fuéssi, sarébba, Stato	Revelato.	Rivelato.	Reuelatus essem rel fuerim, &c.	When I had been reuealed, led, &c.		
future	Como fuéremos ozi uviéssemos sido fuéredes ozi uviéssedes sido fuéren ozi uviéssen sido	Revelados.	Póssimo, fuéssimo, sarémmo Stato fuéssimo, fuéssimo, saréisti, Stato fuéssimo, fuéssimo, sarébbo, Stato	Revelados.	Rivelato.	Reuelarer, &c.	When I shall be Reuealed, &c.		

Infinitive

Declining of Verbes Passiues.

Immitive mode in Indicative.

Ser Revelado.] Rivelari, si fere Rivelato.] Reuelari, si fere Reuelato, to be Reuealed.

Aver Sido Revelado.] E fere fato Revelado.] Reuelatum, si fere fuit, to be Reuealed.

Aver de fér.] Dower offere Rivelato.] Reuelatum, si fere, to be Reuealed.

Revelado, [sicut ad offere Rivelato,] Reuelatum, si fere, hereafter.

Lo que es Revelado.] Rivelato, si fere, which is Reuealed.

Lo que ha de fer.] Hauead offere Rivelato,] Reuelatum, si fere, hereafter.

After this manner in every reflex all other Verbes Passiues, remaining irregular of what Conjugation former are to be Declined as of the second Conjugation Sov. Vendido, Poy. D. Vendido, and of the third Conjugation as Sov. G. Mo. Corresponding to the first and to the self.

Note that the Irregular mode of the Conjugation to the second and to the third person of Verbes Actives, make them have the Regular conjugation as Dijo, se fui, etc.

Now will I handle and intent of the Verbes Irregular (in which I could not find any and difficult to learn nor to learn, because) in such a way and manner that he may learn this case or very little paine Decline any of them, what forier, for which purpose and for whose sake and profit, I have to my great labour brought them into the forme as followeth, and I have to willingly say, that no one of them ne befall to the one (as a bone) shall be remaining, nor here following let downe, that my labours may be unmerited in the same, and the reader is prout to my paines.

The first Conjugation of Verbes Irregular in AR, as
DAR, in Italian and Latin Dico, to Give.

The Verbes Irregular like as the Regular divided into three Conjugations, the first in the second in the third in the.

The Verbes Irregular differ from the Regular stote going in their first Conjugation, as by the Examples following you may see.

Indicative mode.

Spanish.	Soy D. O.	Soy D. O.	Latin.
Italian.	Soy D. O.	Soy D. O.	I do Give.
Latin.	Reuelari, &c.	Reuelari, &c.	I do Give.

Spanish.	Doy D. O.	Doy D. O.	I do Give.
Italian.	Reuelari, &c.	Reuelari, &c.	I do Give.
Latin.	Reuelari, &c.	Reuelari, &c.	I do Give.

Spanish.	Doy D. O.	Doy D. O.	I do Give.
Italian.	Reuelari, &c.	Reuelari, &c.	I do Give.
Latin.	Reuelari, &c.	Reuelari, &c.	I do Give.

Spanish.	Doy D. O.	Doy D. O.	I do Give.
Italian.	Reuelari, &c.	Reuelari, &c.	I do Give.
Latin.	Reuelari, &c.	Reuelari, &c.	I do Give.

I. Coming.
of Verbes
Irregular
in AR.

Note.

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Second perfect	yo He tu ás aquel á.	Ho hai he	Dedi, &c. <i>et supra.</i>	I have given, &c. as next above.
	hemos aveys án	Dádo.	Dabbiámo hauémo hámo	Dato.
Imperf.	Avía Avias Avía	Dádo.	Hauéua hauéni hauéna	Dederam, &c.
	Avíamos Avíades Avían	Dádo.	hauenámo hauenáte hauenáno	Dato.
future.	Daré, Darás, Dará	Dádo.	Daré, Dari, Dard.	Dabo, &c.
	Darémos, Daréys, Darán.	Dádo.	Darémo, Daréte, Daráno.	I shall or will give, &c.
Imperative mode.				
Spanish.	Dá, &c.	Dá tu, Dá colui.	Da dato, Des dato, &c.	Give thou, &c.
	Démos, Dad, Dén.	Díamo, Date, Díano.		

Subjunctive mode.

Pref. Como	YO De, tu des, aquel De,	TO Díe, tu díe, colui díe,	Dem, &c.	When I do give, &c.
	démos, dés, dén,	diámo, diáte, dámo,	Cum	
Imperf.	díera, daria, diéste, díeras, darias, diéste, díera, daria, diéste,	díssi, darti, darta, díssi, daretí, darta, díssi, dareté, daria,	Darem, &c.	When I did give, &c.
	díeramos, dariamos, diésemos, díeras, díades, diéste, díran, darian, diésten.	díssimo, daretímo, díste, dareté, díssero, daretébano, darta,	Cum	
perfect. Como	aya, áyas, aya, ayámos, ayáys, ayan,	habbia, habbi, habbi, habbiámo, habbiáte, habbiáno,	Dederim, &c.	When I have given, &c.
			Dato. Cum	

Imperf.

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Plus perfect.	uviéras, oj uviéle, uviéros, oj uviéles, uviéras, oj uviéle,	Quando	Quando	Cum
	uviéramos, oj uviémos, uviérades, oj uviédes, uviéran, oj uviélen,	Dádo.	Dádo.	dádo.
future. Como	díere, díeres, díere,	Dádo.	Dádo.	Dádo.
	díeremos, díeredes, díeren.	Quando	Dádo.	Dádo.
DAR.	Dá, &c.	Dá, &c.	Dá, &c.	Dá, &c.
	Dá, &c.	Dá, &c.	Dá, &c.	Dá, &c.
Infinitive mode Present tense.				
DAR.	Dá, &c.	Dá, &c.	Dá, &c.	Dá, &c.
	Dá, &c.	Dá, &c.	Dá, &c.	Dá, &c.
Participle of the Present tense, and Active voice.				
El que da, [Dá, &c.] Dá, &c. Dá, &c.				
Participle of the Present tense, and Passive voice.				
El que da, [Dá, &c.] Dá, &c. Dá, &c.				
Participle of the Future tense.				
El que ha, oj el pera de dar, [Dá, &c.] Dá, &c. Dá, &c.				

These here under written only differ from the Regular verbs in the first preterited tense of their Infinitive mode, which always change Car of the Infinitive into que, and gar into que, as

Infinitives.				
Acercar, to come near,	yo Acerco,	yo Acerco,	yo Acerco,	yo Acerco,
Cercar, to compone,	yo Cercó,	yo Cercó,	yo Cercó,	yo Cercó,
Carcar, to charge, to burden,	yo Cargó,	yo Cargó,	yo Cargó,	yo Cargó,
Acicar, to make little,	yo Acidico,	yo Acidico,	yo Acidico,	yo Acidico,
Ahogar, to choke, to drown,	yo Ahogo,	yo Ahogo,	yo Ahogo,	yo Ahogo,
Allegar, to come near,	yo Allego,	yo Allego,	yo Allego,	yo Allego,
Altoar, to hang up,	yo Altoce,	yo Altoce,	yo Altoce,	yo Altoce,
Anegar, to drown,	yo Anego,	yo Anego,	yo Anego,	yo Anego,
Arrancar, to pluck up,	yo Arranco,	yo Arranco,	yo Arranco,	yo Arranco,
Arremangar, to tuck up,	yo Arremango,	yo Arremango,	yo Arremango,	yo Arremango,
Arrancar, to pluck up,	yo Arisco,	yo Arisco,	yo Arisco,	yo Arisco,
Apelgar, to stike down,	yo Apelgo,	yo Apelgo,	yo Apelgo,	yo Apelgo,
Arrulgar, to furrow,	yo Arrugo,	yo Arrugo,	yo Arrugo,	yo Arrugo,
Bogar, to row,	yo Bogo,	yo Bogo,	yo Bogo,	yo Bogo,
Bolcar, to tumble down,	yo Bolco,	yo Bolco,	yo Bolco,	yo Bolco,
Cafifar, to chaff,	yo Cafijo,	yo Cafijo,	yo Cafijo,	yo Cafijo,
Calcar, to tuck under fast,	yo Calco,	yo Calco,	yo Calco,	yo Calco,
Colgar, to hang,	yo Colce,	yo Colce,	yo Colce,	yo Colce,
Cocer, to name at, to mock,	yo Cocco,	yo Cocco,	yo Cocco,	yo Cocco,
Cavalgar, to ride,	yo Cavalgo,	yo Cavalgo,	yo Cavalgo,	yo Cavalgo,
Chocar, to tuck,	yo Chueco,	yo Chueco,	yo Chueco,	yo Chueco,
Denegar, to refuse,	yo Deniego,	yo Deniego,	yo Deniego,	yo Deniego,
Derrascar, to tumble down,	yo Derrucco,	yo Derrucco,	yo Derrucco,	yo Derrucco,
Descolgar, to unhang,	yo Descolugo,	yo Descolugo,	yo Descolugo,	yo Descolugo,
Desfogar, to cool,	yo Desfuego,	yo Desfuego,	yo Desfuego,	yo Desfuego,

LAST

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Infinitives.	Pref.	Preterperfects.
Embarcár, to embark,	yo Embárco,	Embarqué.
Desligár, to bunt,	yo Desligo,	Desligué.
Embaucár, to cast into a hole,	yo Embaucó,	Embaucué.
Emboár, <i>idem</i> ,	yo Embóco,	Emboqué.
Desnegár, to recant,	yo Desnégó,	Desnegué.
Encercár, to chesť up,	yo Encircó,	Encarcué.
Divulgar, to publish,	yo divulgó,	Divulgué.
Empegár, to pitch,	yo Empiégo,	Empiegué.
Fabricár, to frant,	yo Fabrico,	Fabricué.
Encenegrar, to durt,	yo Encienégó,	Encenegué.
Fregir, to rub,	yo Frígo,	Fregué.
Holgár, to be glad,	yo Holgó,	Holgué.
Mancar, to want,	yo Mánco,	Manqué.
Jugár, to play,	yo Juégo,	Jugué.
Marcár, to marke,	yo Márco,	Márqué.
Mercár, to buce,	yo Miérco,	Merqué.
Mafcar, to chew,	yo Máscó,	Máscué.
Mendigár, to beg,	yo Mendígo,	Mendigué.
Navegar, to sail,	yo Navegó,	Navegué.
Otorgár, to graunt,	yo Otorgó,	Otorgué.
Pelucár, to punch,	yo Pelúco,	Pelusqué.
Pagar, to pay,	yo Págó,	Pague.
Pelcar, to fish,	yo Pélico,	Pelqué.
Plegár, to fold,	yo Pliégo,	Pliqué.
Regár, to water,	yo Ríego,	Regué.

These here aboue and their like in all other Tenses varie nothing from the verbes regular in all afores going, as Juzgár, to judge, the Indicative present Tense Juzgo, I judge, Preterimperfect Juzgáva, first Preterperfect Juzgue, the second Perfect He juzgádo, the Preterperfect Juzgadó, Future Juzgaré. Imperative Juzga. The Present Tense of the Optative and si a juzgádo, Pluperfect uviéra or uviéste Juzgádo, Future Juzgaré. Infinitive Juzgar. Participle Juzgádo.

ESTAR
Of Verbes Irregular the first Coniugation in AR, as Estár,
in Italian Essere, in Latin Eſſe, [To be, to stand.]

Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pref.	YO ESTO Y, tu estás, aquel está, estamos, estáys, están.	Io STO, tu stái, colui stái;	Eſſe, &c.	I stande, or I am, &c.
Imper. fect.	estáva, estávas, estáva, estábamos, estábades, estávan.	ſtáua, ſtáuas, ſtáua, ſtáuamos, ſtáuades, ſtáuano.	ſtabam, &c.	I was or I stande, &c.
First Perf.	estuve, estuviste, estuvo, estuvimos, estuvistes, estuvieron.	ſteti, & ſtei, ſteti, ſtete, ſtimo, ſtete, ſtetero.	ſtei, &c.	I have beene, or have stode, &c.

second

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
second Perf. fect.	yo Hé, tu ás, aquel há, hemos, avéys, án,	ſóno, ſeí, <i>etc.</i> ſiámo, ſete, <i>etc.</i> ſóno,	ſtato, ut ſupra.	I have beene, or have stod, &c.
Plu- perfect.	avía, avias, avía, aviamos, avíades, avian,	éra, éri, <i>etc.</i> era, <i>etc.</i> eraúmo, eraúde, <i>etc.</i> erano,	ſtato, ſtati.	I had beene, or had stod, &c.
future.	Estoré, estarás, estará, estaremos, estáreys, estarán.	ſtaró, ſtará, <i>etc.</i> ſtará, <i>etc.</i> ſtarémo, ſtaré, <i>etc.</i> ſtaráno,	ſtabo, &c.	I shall or will stande or be, &c.
Impe- rative mode.	Está, ſta, etc., estemos, estád, estén.	ſta, ſta, ſtámo, <i>etc.</i> ſtámo,	ſta, ſta, &c.	be thou, or stand thou, &c.

Substantive mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pref. Como	Esté, Estés, Esté, Estemos, Estéys, Estén.	ſtia, <i>etc.</i> ſtia, <i>etc.</i> ſtia, <i>etc.</i> ſtiamo, <i>etc.</i> ſtáte, <i>etc.</i> ſtiano, <i>etc.</i>	Cum	When I am or stand, &c.
Imper. fect. Como	Estuvíera, estaría, estuviese, Estuvíeras, estarias, estuvieses, Estuvíera, estaria, estuviese, Estuvíeramos, estariamos, estuviésemos, Estuvíeras, estariades, estuviesedes, Estuvíeran, citarián, estuviesen.	ſtarei, ſtessi, ſtaría, ſtaríe, ſtessi, ſtaría, ſtaríe, ſtessi, ſtaría, ſtarímo, ſtessimo, ſtaríte, ſtessi, ſtaría, ſtaríbbono, ſtariano, ſtessero.	Cum	When I was, &c.
Perfect Como	A'yá, áyas, áya, Ayámos, Ayáys, Ayáyan.	ſta, ſta, ſta, ſta, ſta, ſta, ſtato, Quádo ſtamo, ſtáte, ſtiano, ſtati.	ſteterim &c.	When I have stod or beene, &c.

uviéra;

Déclining of Verbes Irregular

Infinitine mode P̄esent

Estár,]	Stare,]	Stare,]	to Stand or be.
avér Estáðo,]	hauer Stáðo,]	Sterisse,]	to have Stáðo or beene.
avér oz esperár d'estár, {douer Stare, } esper for Stare, }		Staturumus esse, Gerund.	to Stand hereafter.
Estándo,]	Stando,]	Stando,]	In Standing or being
Estáðo,]	Stato,]	Statu,]	Stode or beene.

These Verbs following make their Present tense of the Indicative, by changing the last
Syllable sauc one of the Infinitive the c into ic, and the o into vo, as

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Pres.</i>	<i>Pret.</i>
Aſſentár, to ſit, to ſet,	yo aſſiénto,	Aſſenté.
Approvár, to allow,	yo appruévo,	Apróv.
Sentár, to ſit,	yo ſiento,	Senté,
Sonár, to ſound,	yo ſuénio,	Sóné,
Conſervár, to keepe,	yo conſíervo,	Conſervé.
Atronár, to thundre,	yo atronéo,	Attroné.
Cegár, to make blinde,	yo ciégo,	Ciegué.
Contár, to reckon,	yo cuento,	Conté.
Cerrár, to ſhut, to locke,	yo ciéro,	Cerré.
Degollár, to kill, to behead,	yo deguéllo,	Degollé.
Enterrár, to put in the earth,	yo entíerro,	Entérte.
Derrocár, to thowde downe,	yo deruéco,	derroqué.
Colgár, to hang,	yo cuégo,	Colgué.
Deſterrár, to baniſh,	yo deſtiéro,	Deſterré.
Deſſollár, to paunch,	yo deſuéllo,	Deſſollé.
Hollár, to tread on,	yo huéollo,	Hollé.
Entefáir, to bend,	yo entíeo,	Entefé.
Segár, to cut,	yo ſíęgo,	Segué.
Reſollár, to breath,	yo reſuéllo,	Reſololé.
Reſolgár, <i>idem</i> ,	yo reſuélgo,	Reſolgué.
Temblár, to tremble,	yo tiémblo,	Temblé.
Tentár, to aſſaie,	yo tiénto,	Tenté.
Tropceáir, to ſtumble,	yo tropiégo,	Tropceé.
Adereçár, to make readie,	yo aderégo,	Adereſé.

Of Verbes Irregular of the first Conjugation in A.R., as ANDAR.
In Italian, *Andare*; in Latin, *Ire, Gradi, to Go*.

ANDAR

Indicative mood

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	Go, thou Goest, &c.
Present.	A'ndo, ánda, ánda, Andámos, andáys, ándan.	Vo, & Vado, Vai, Va, Andámo, Andáte, Vámo.	Eo, i, &c.	I Go, thou Goest, &c.
Imperfect.	Andáva, Andávas, Andáva, Andávamos, Andávades, Andávan.	Andáva, Andávai, Andáva, Andávamo, Andávate, Andávano.	Ibam, &c.	I did Go, &c.
First Perfect.	Anduve, Anduviste, Anduvo, Anduvimos, Anduvistes, Anduvieron.	Andati, Andásti, Andó, Andimmo, Andásti, Andárono.	Iui, &c.	I have Gone, &c.
Second Perfect.	He, as, a, Hémos, avéys, án,	Sono, Séi, é, Síamo, Séi, Sono,	Andáto. Andati.	I have Gone, &c. as before.
Superfut.	Avia, Avias, Avia, Avíamos, Avíades, Avian,	Era, éris, éra, Eraúmo, eraváte, eráno.	Ineram, &c.	I had Gone, &c.
Future.	Andaré, Andarás, Andará, Andarémos, Andaréys, Andará.	Andérbo, andrébo, Andérbi, andrébi, Andérá, andréá, Andérmo, andrémo, Andérte, Andréte, Andéráno, andrémo.	Ibo, &c.	I shall or will Go, &c.
	Imperative mode			
	A'ndatu, ánde aquél,	Vá, & Váde, ojí vada colm,	Iu, &c.	Go thou, &c.
	Andémos, Andád, ánden.	Andidimo, Andáde, Vádano, ojí vadiño.		

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

ANDAR.

Of Verbes Irregular the first Conjugation in A.R.

Substantive mode.

Spanish.

Pres. andé, andés, andé,
Como andémos, andéys, andén.

Imper. anduvié, andaríe, anduvíese,
Como anduvíeras, andaríeas, anduvíeseas,
anduvíera, andaríe, anduvíese.

perfect. ayá, ayás, ayá,
Como ayamos, ayays, ayán.

pluperf. uvíéra, o2 uvíésses,
Como uvíéras, o2 uvíésses,
uvíéra, o2 uvíéssie,

Futur. anduviére,
Como anduvíeres,
anduvíeres,
anduvíéremos,
anduvíércedes,
anduvíeren.

Quando

andémos,
andéys,
andén.

anduvíeras, andaríeas, anduvíeseas,
anduvíera, andaríe, anduvíese.

ayamos, ayays, ayán.

uvíéramos, o2 uvíéssemos,
uvíérades, o2 uvíéssedes,
uvíéran, o2 uvíéssen.

anduvíeres,
anduvíeres,
anduvíeres,
anduvíéremos,
anduvíércedes,
anduvíeren.

Italian.

váda, vádi,
vádi, vadi,
váda, vadi,

andámo, andiáte,
vádano, vadiño.

sia, sii, sia,
sia, sia,

siamo, siate,
siam, sia,

sarí, sarei,
só, sarefti,
só, sarebbe,

sarímo, saremmo,
só, sarefti,
só, sarebbero,

sarí, sarei,
sá, sarefti,
sá, sarebbe,

Latin.

Eam, &c.
Cum

item, &c.
Cum

iuverim, &c.
Cum

iussim, &c.
Cum

iuero, &c.
Cum

When I do
go, &c.

When I did
go, &c.

When I have gone,
&c.

When I had gone,
&c.

When I shall go hereaf-
ter, &c.

Infinitive mode Present tense.

ANDA'R,] Andare,] ire,] to go.

Avér andádo,] Effer andádo,] luisse,] to have gone.

Avér o2 esperár de andár,] Effer per andare,] Dóser andare,] Hauer ad andare,] futur.

Andádo,] Andádo,] Eundo,] in going.
Participle of the Present tense and Active voice.

El que andá,] Andáte,] Eum,] one going.

Andádo,] Andádo,] gone.

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in E.R. as Traér,
Sabér, Tenér, Poder, Querér, Ponér, Hazér, Cabér.

TRAER

Indicative mode.

Spanish.

yo TRAYGO,

tutrás,

aquel trác,

tráemos,

tráys,

tráen.

Tráya,

tráys,

tráy,

trámo,

tráyades,

tráyan,

trúx, o2 tráxe,

trúxiste, o2 tráxiste,

trúxo, o2 tráxo,

trúximos, o2 tráximos,

trúxistes, o2 tráxistes,

trúxeron, o2 tráxeron,

hé, o2 llue,

as, &c. tráydo.

avía,

avías, &c.

saré,

sarés,

saré,

traeré,

traerás,

traerá,

traerémos,

traeréys,

traerán,

Italian.

io APPORTO,

tu appórti,

colui appórtia,

appórtámo,

appórtáte,

appórtano.

appórtáua,

appórtáui,

appórtáum,

appórtauamo,

appórtauate,

appórtauano.

appórtá,

appórtáste,

appórtó,

appórtámmo,

appórtáste,

appórtáron, appórtáro, appórtár.

ho,

llai,

apportáto.

adduxi, &c.

adduxeram,

adduxerat,

apportáto.

apporáro,

apporádi,

apporára,

apporáremo,

apporárete,

apporárramo.

Latin.

Adduco, &c.

Fetch or bring,

&c.

Adducebam,

&c.

I did fetch or

bring, &c.

Adduxi, &c.

I have fetcht or

brought, &c.

Adduxi, &c.

I had fetcht or

bought, &c.

Adducam, &c.

I shall or will

fetch or bring, &c.

Imperative mode.

Imperative mode.

Trácu,

tráyga aquel,

tráemos,

tráed,

tráyan,

Apporátu,

apporádi,

apporára,

apporáremo,

apporárete,

apporárramo.

Adduc, addu-

cito.

Bring or fetch

thou, &c.

TRAER Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as **TRAER**, in Italian
Apportare, Arrecare, Trabere, Adducere, Menare, in Latin Adducere,
Afferre, Trahere, to Fetch, to Bring, to Carry, to Draw.

Subjunctive mode.

Spanish.

Tráyá *o* Tráyá,
Tráyás *o* Tráyás, &c.
Tráyá, *o* Tráyá,
Trayán.

Prof.

Como

Italian.

Quando

Apporti, Apporti, Apporti,
Apportámo, Apportáte, Apportáno.

Cum

Adducam, &c. When I doe
fetch, or bring,
&c.

Truxéria, Traxéria, Truxéfie,
Truxérás, Traxérás, Truxéfés,
Truxéra, Traxéra, Truxéfle.

Quando

Apportaréi *o* Apportássi,
Apportaréi *o* Apportássi,
Apportarébbe *o* Apportássi.

Cum

Adducerem, &c. When I did
fetch or bring,
&c.

Truxérámos, Traxérámos, Truxéfemos
Truxérades, Traxérades, Truxéfedes,
Truxérán, Traxérán, Truxéfén.

you shall find in some authors Traxéfie, Traxéfés, &c.

Quando

Apportarémmo *o* Apportássimo,
Apportaréssi *o* Apportássi,
Apportarébbono *o* Apportássero.

Cum

Adduxerim, &c. When I have
fetched or brought, &c.

Tráydo.

Quando

Habbiá, Habbiá, Habbiá,
Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Habbiáno.

Cum

Adduxerato. When I have
fetched or brought, &c.

Tráydo.

Quando

Haueréi *o* Hauéssi,
Haueréssi *o* Hauéssi,
Hauerébbe *o* Hauéssi.

Cum

Adduxissim, &c. When I had
brought or
fetched, &c.

Tráydo.

Quando

Haueró, Hauerá, Hauerá,
Hauerémo *o* Hauerássimo,
Haueréssi *o* Hauerássesi,
Hauerébbono *o* Hauerássero.

Cum

Adduxero, &c. When I shall
bring or fetch,
&c.

Futur.

Como

Truxére,
Truxéres,
Truxére.

Truxéremos,
Truxéredes,
Truxéren.

TRAE[R] Apportare] Adducere,] to Bring, to Fetch.
Avér Traýdo, Hauer Apportato,] Adduxisse,] to have brought.
Avér o[z] Esperá de tráe, Hauer ad Apportare,] Adducturum esse,] to bring hereafter.

Trayéndo,] Apportando,] Adducendo,] in bringing or fetching.
El que tráe,] Apportante,] Adducens,] one bringing.
Tráydo,] Apportato,] Adductu,] brought.
el que ha o[z] espéra Dóuer Apportare, Adductu,] About to bring
de Traér, Eſſendo per Apportare,] or fetch.

Infinitive mode Present tense.

Participle of the Active and Present tense.

Future tense.

Avér o[z] Esperá de tráe, Hauer ad Apportare,] Adducturum esse,] to bring hereafter.

Eſſens per Apportare,]

Gerund.

Participle of the Active and Present tense.

Participle of the Passive and Present tense.

Participle of the Future tense.

el que ha o[z] espéra Dóuer Apportare, Adductu,] About to bring

de Traér, Eſſendo per Apportare,] or fetch.

These Verbes following ending in er, make their Present tense of the Indicative by adding an *s* before *e*, thus,

Infinitives.

Acacer, to happen,
Acontecer, *idem*,
Adolescer, to be sonie by hale,
Agradecer, to give thanks,
Amortecer, to swoone,
Desfallecer, *idem*,
Apetecer, to desire,
Crecer, to growe,
Encallecer, to waxe hard as
hawne.

Encarecer, to augment,

Empecer, to hinder,

Establecer, to establish,

Fenecer, to finis,

Pacer, to feare,

Perecer, to perish,

Vencér, to ouercome,

yo venço,

Venci.

Pres.

Acacéy, yo acacéo,
Acontecer, yo acontéscio,
Adolescer, yo adolesclo,
Agradecer, yo agradéscio,
Amortecer, yo amortéscio,
Desfallecer, yo desfalleclo,
Apetecer, yo apetéscio,
Crecer, yo créscio,
Encallecer, yo encalleclo,
Encarecer, yo encareclo,
Empecer, yo empéscio,
Establecer, yo estableclo,
Fenecer, yo fenéscio,
Pacer, yo páscio,
Perecer, yo peréscio,

Except.

yo venço,

Venci.

Preter.

Acaecí.

Aconteci.

Adolesci.

Agradecí.

Amorteci.

Desfalleci.

Apetecí.

Crecí.

Encallecí.

Encareci.

Empecí.

Estableci.

Feneci.

Paci.

Pereci.

In all other moods and Tenses they are declined like the Verbes Regular of the second Conjugation in ER.

These in ger, make their Present of the Indicative by changing *g* into *j*, which the Spaniards in writing do much use, setting downe the one for the other, as wel in Noumes as in Verbes, as in Noumes Magistad, Majestad: Mensaje, Mensaje, and the like.

Infinitives.

Encogér, to withdraw,
Recogér, to gather up or retire
Acoger, to entertaine,
Escoger, to chuse out,
Coger, to gather,
Vngir, to anoint,

In other moods and Tenses like the Regulars.

Pres.

Encogi, yo encój,
Recogi, yo recój,
Acój, yo acój,
Escój, yo escój,
Cogój, yo cój,
Vngijo, yo unijo,

yo deféndo,

yo dehíendo,

Defendi,

Defendí.

Preter.

Encogi.

Recogi.

Acogí.

Escogí.

Cogí.

Vngí.

These make their Present tense of the Indicative by adding *i* in the last syllable save one of the Infinitive, as

Infinitives.

Defender, to defend,

Dehender, to cleave asunder.

yo deféndo,

yo dehíendo,

Defendi,

Defendí.

Pres.

yo deféndo,

yo dehíendo,

Defendi,

Defendí.

And these make the Present tense by turning *o* in the last syllable save one of the Infinitive into *ue*, as

Infinitives.

Bolver, to turne,
Rebolver, to returne,
Soler, to be wont,
Coler, to sowe,
Cozer, to seethe,
Dolér, to be soie, to grieue;

And these following thus,

Caer, to fall,
Roer, to gnawe,
Valer, to be worth,
Traer, to fetch or bring,
Oir, to hear,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

Pres.

yo buevó,

yo rebuélvo,

yo suélo,

yo cuélo,

yo cuézo,

yo duélo,

yo duézo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo valgo,

yo tráyo,

yo óyo,

yo cayo,

yo róyo,

yo val

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

SABER Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as SABER, in Italian
Sapere, Latin Scire, Sapere, to Knowe.

(as in the first part.)

Indicative mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pref.	yo SE', tu Sábes, aquel Sábe,	Io So, tu Sáti, colui Sa,	Scio, Sci, &c.	I knowe, thou knowest.
	Sabémos, Sabéys, Saben.	Sappiámo, Sapéte, Sámmo.		
Imper. fect.	Sabía, Sabías, Sabia.	Sapéia, Sapéi, Sapéa.	Sciebam, &c.	I did knowe, &c.
	Sabímos, Sabíades, Sabian.	Sapéiamo, Sapéiáte, Sapéiano.		
First Perf.	Súpe, Súpste, Súpo.	Séppi, Sapéppi, Séppe.	Sciui, &c.	I haue knowne, &c.
	Supímos, Supístes, Supíeron.	Sapéppimo, Sapéppste, Sapéppero.		
second perfect.	He o ^{he} as o ^{he} a Hémos avéys án	Ho Hai Ha Habbiámo Hauéte Hámo	Sciui, &c. ^{as ante.} Saputo.	I haue knowne, &c. as aboue.
Pluper. fect.	Avía Avias Avia	Hauéua Hauéui Hauéua	Sciueram, &c.	I had knowne, &c.
	Avíamos Avíades Avian	Hauéuamo Hauéuate Hauéuano	Saputo.	
Futur.	Sabré, Sabrés, Sabrá. Sabrémos, Sabréys, Sabrán.	Soppró, Sapprái, Sapprái. Sapprémo, Sappréte, Sappráno.	Sciám, &c.	I shal or shal knowe &c.

Imperative mode

Sábe tu, Sépa aquel.	Sappitu, Sappia colui.	Sci, Scito, &c.	Know thou, &c.
Sepámos, Sabéds, Sépan.	Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sáppiano.		

Declining

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Declining of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as SABER.

SABER.

Subjunctive mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pref.	SE'PA, Sépas, Sepa,	SAP'IA, Sappia, Sáppia,	
Como	Sepámos, Sepáys, Sépan.	Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sáppiano.	Quando
			Quando
Imper. fect.		Supíera, fabríra, supiéffe, Supíeras, fabrías, supiéffes, Supíera, fabríra, supiéffe,	Supréi, sapéffi, Supréti, sapéffi, Suprébe, sapéffi,
		Supíeramos, fabríamos, supiéffemos, Supíerades, fabríades, supiéffedes, Supíeran, fabrián, supiéden.	Suprémo, sapéfímo, Supréte, sapéste, Suprébero, sapéffero.
Perfect.	A'ya, áyas, áya,	Sabido.	Quando
Como	Ayámos, ayáys, áyan.	Sabido.	Quando
			Quando
Pluperf.	Uvíera, oz uviéffe, uviéras, oz uviéffes, uviéra, oz uviéffe,	Sabido.	Quando
Como	uviéramos, oz uviéffemos, uviérades, oz uviéffedes, uviéran, oz uviéffen,	Sabido.	Quando
			Quando
First future	Supíere, Supíeres, Supíere,	Sabido.	Quando
Como	Supíeremos, Supíeredes, Supíeren.	Sabido.	Quando
			Quando
Second future	Uvíére, oz avré, uviéras, oz avrás, uviéra, oz avrá,	Sabido.	Quando
Como	uviéremos, oz avrémos, uviéredes, oz avréys, uviéren, oz aurán.	Sabido.	Quando

Infinitive mode present tense.

SABÉ'R.]	Sapére,]	Sci,]	to knowe.
avér Sabido,]	Sci,]	Sci,]	to haue knowne.
avér oz ef-]	Sci,]	Sci,]	to haue knowne.
avér per de-]	Sci,]	Sci,]	to haue knowne.
Sabér,]	Sci,]	Sci,]	to knowe hereafter.

Gerund.

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

SABER Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as SABER, in Italian
Sapere, Latin Scire, Sapere, to knowe.

(Caro isti boni sapit.) Indicative mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pref.	yo SE, tu Sábes, aquel Sábe.	Io So, tu Sáis, colui Sá.	Scio, Sci, &c.	I knowe, thou knowest.
	Sabémos, Sabéys, Sáben.	Sappiámo, Sapére, Sámo.		
Imper. fect.	Sabia, Sabias, Sabia.	Saciea, Sapéui, Sapieu.	Sciebam, &c.	I did knowe, &c.
	Sabíamos, Sabíades, Sabian.	Sapeuimo, Sapenádes, Sapeuano.		
First Perf.	Sípe, Sípiste, Sípo.	Séppi, Sapéppi, Síppe.	Scini, &c.	I haue knowne, &c.
	Supímos, Supístes, Supíeron.	Sappémmo, Sapéfete, Séppero.		
second perfect.	He oíue us oíuisti a	Ho Hai Ha	Scini, &c. &c. &c. &c.	I haue knowne, &c. as above.
	Hémos avéys án	Habbiámo Habbiáte Hámmo	Saputo.	
Pluper. fect.	Avía Avías Avia	Hauéua Hauéui Hauécha	Sciueram, &c.	I had knowne, &c.
	Avíamos Avíades Avian	Hauéuamo Hauéuate Hauéhano	Saputo.	
Futur.	Sabré, Sabrás, Sabrá.	Soppró, Sapprái, Sapprá.	Sciam, &c.	I shall oí you knowe &c.
	Sabrémos, Sabréys, Sabrán.	Sapprémo, Sappréte, Sappráno.		

Imperative mode

Sábe tu, Sepa aquel.	Sappitu, Sappia colui.	Sci, Scito, &c.	Know thou, &c.
Sepámos, Sabéds, Sépan.	Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sappiáno.		

Declining

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Declining of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as SABER.

SABER.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pref.	SE PA, Sépas, Sépa,	SAPPIA, Sappi, Sappia,	CiAM, &c.	When I do knowe, &c.
Como	Sepámos, Sepáys, Sepán.	Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sappiáno.	Cum	
Imperf.				
Como				
Perfect.	A'ya, áyas, aya,	Sabido.	Cum	
Como	Ayámos, ayáys, áyan.	Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hámmo	Sciuerim, &c.	When I haue knowne, &c.
Imperf.				
Como				
First Future	Supíere, Supíeres, Supíere,	Sabido.	Cum	
Como	Supíeremos, Supíeredes, Supíeren.	Hauerémo, Haueréte, haueríanno	Sciuro, &c.	When I shall knowe, &c.
Second Future	Uvíére, oí avré, uvíéros, oí avrás, uvíére, oí avrá,	Sabido.	Cum	
Como	Uvíéremos, oí avrémos, uvíéredes, oí avréys, uvíéren, oí aurán.	Hauerémo, Haueréte, haueríanno	Sciuro, &c. & antea.	When I shall knowe, &c.

Infinitive mode Present tense.

SABÉ'R]	Sapére,]	Scire,]	to knowe.
avér Sabido,]	Hauer Sapéo,]	Sciuerisse,]	to haue knowne.
		Future tense.	
avér oí el- Estar perá de Saber,]	Dauer sapére, Hauer a sapére,]	Sciuturum esse,]	to knowe hereafter.
		Ejére per sapére,	

Gerund.

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Grund.		
Sabiéndo,]	Sapendo,]	Sciendo,]
el que Sábe,]	quello chi Sa,]	Sciens,]
Sabido,]	Sapido,]	one knowing. known.

Participle of the Present, and Active.
Participle of the Preter tense and Passive.

Declining of Verbes Irregular of the second Conjugation in ER, as TENER, TENER.

Indicative mode

Present.	YO TE'NGO,	10 TE'NGO,	Teneo, &c.	I do Hold, &c.
	tu Tiénes, aquel Tiene,	tu Tiéni, colui Tiene,		
Imperf.	Tenémos, Tenéys, Tiénen,	Tenidmo, Tenéte, Téngano.		
	Tenía, Tenías, Tenía,	Tenéua, & tenéa, Tenéu, Tenéua, & tenéa,	Tenebam, &c.	I did Hold, &c.
First Perfect.	Teníamos, Teníades, Tenian.	Tenéuimo, Tenéuáte, Tenéuano.	Tenni, &c.	I have Hold, &c.
	Túve, Tuviste, Túvo,	Tenni, Tenésti, Téne,		
Second Perfect.	Tuvimos, Tuvistes, Tuviron.	Tennémmo, Tenéste, Ténero.	Tenul, &c.	I have Hold, &c. as next above.
	Yo He, Tu as, aquel a,	Ho, Hai, Ha,		
Pluperf.	Hémos, avéys, cin,	Habbiámo, Habréte, Hámmo.	Tenido.	Tenido.
	Avia, Avias, Avia,	Hauéua, Hauéti, Hauéua,	Tenueram, &c.	
Future.	Aviamos, Aviades, Avian.	Hauéuámo, Hauéuáte, Hauéuano.	Tenido.	I had Hold, &c.
	Tendré, o2 Terné, Tendré, o2 Ternás, Tendrá, o2 Terná,	Tennerá, & Terró, Tennérá, & Terrá,	Tenebo, &c.	I shall o2 Hold, &c.
	Tendrémos, o2 Ternémos, Tendréys, o2 Ternéys, Tendrán, o2 ternán,	Tenerámo, & Terrémo, Teneréte, & Terréte, Tenerámo, & Terrámo,		

Imperative

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Imperative mode		
Tén tu,	Tén tu, &c.	Tene tu, &c.
Téng a aquél,	Téng a colui,	Tene a, &c.
Tengámos,	Tenid,	Tene tu, &c.

Substantive mode.

Spanish.			Italian.			Latin.		
Pret.	Téng,	Téngas,	Tenga,	Tengámo,	Tenid,	Teneam, &c.	Tenga,	When I do hold, &c.
Como				Tengámos,	Tengáys,	Cum,		
Imperf.				Tengámos,	Tengáys,			
Como	Tuvíera, ternía, tuviéste, Tuvíeras, ternías, tuviéstes, Tuvíera, ternía, tuviéste.		Tenéssi, teneréi, tenería, Tenéssi, teneréti, tenería, Tene, tenerébe, tenería,	Tenéssimo, tenerémmo, Tenéssi, teneréte, Tenéssero, tenerébbono.	Quando	Tenerem, &c.	Tenerem, &c.	When I did hold, &c.
perfect.					Tenido.	Tenurim, &c.	Tenurim, &c.	When I have holden, &c.
Como	ayás,	ayás,			Tenido.	Tenido.	Cum,	
pluperf.						Habbiámo,	Tenuissim, &c.	When I had holden, &c.
Como	ayámos,	ayáys,				Habbiámo,	Tenuissim, &c.	
first futur.						Tuviére,	Tenuero, &c.	When I shall o2 wil hold, &c.
Como	Tuviéremos,	Tuviéredes,	Tuviéren.			Tuviéremos,	Cum,	
Second futur.						Tuviéremos,	Tenuero, &c.	When I shall o2 wil hold, &c. as next above.
Como	uviére o2 avré,	uviéres o2 avras,				Haueró	Tenuero, &c.	
	uviére o2 avrá,	uviére o2 avrá,				Hauerás		
	uviéremos o2 avrémos,	uviéredes o2 avréys,				Hauerá		
	uviéremos o2 avrémos,	uviéredes o2 avréys,				Haueréte		
	uviéren o2 avrá,	uviéren o2 avrá,				Haueráno		

Infinitive mode Present tense.

TENER,] Tenére,] Tenere,] to Hold.
Aver Tenido,] Hauer Tenido,] Tenuisse,] to have Holden.

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Future tense.

Avér de Tenér, *[Duér tenére, Haurá tenére, Tencurum effe,]* to hold hereafter.

Gerund.

Teniéndo, *[Tenéndo, Tendendo,]* In holding.

Participle of the Present and Future.

El que tiene, *[Tenente, Tennen,]* one holding.

Participle of the Present and Passive.

Tenido, *[Tenito, Tenthos,]* Holden.

Like this verb simple are his Compounds in all points declined thowz all Modes and Tenses, as Mantener, to maintain, yo Manténgó, Mantuve. Detener, to detaine or stay, yo Deténgó, Detuve. Retener, to with hold or retaine, yo Reténgó, Retuve. Sostener, to sustaine or uphold, yo Solténgó, Sultuve.

PODER

The second Conjugation of Verbes Irregular in ER, as PODER,

in Italian Potere, in Latin Posse, to be able.

Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	yo P U E D O, tu Puedes, aquel Puede.	P O S S O, P o s s i, P u o.	P o s s i m , &c.	I can or am able, &c.
Imperfect	Podemos, Podéys, Pueden.	P o s s i m o , P o s s i e , P o s s i a n o & P ó n n o .	P o s s i m , &c.	I was able, &c.
First perf.	Podímos, Podíades, Podian.	P o t é u a o & P o t é a , P o t é u i , P o t é u a o & P o t é a .	P o t é a m , &c.	I could or have been able, &c.
Second perf.	Podímos, Podístes, Podieron.	P o t é u a m o , P o t é u i s t e , P o t é u a n o .	P o t u i , &c.	I could or have been able, &c.
Pluperf.	Podímos, Podístes, Podieron.	P o t é u m m o , P o t é u i s t e , P o t é u r o .	P o t u i , &c.	I could or have been able, &c.
Future	Podré, Podrás, Podrá.	P o t r ó , P o t r á i , P o t r á .	P o t r o , &c.	I shall or will be able, &c.
	Podremos, Podréys, Podrán.	P o t r é m o , P o t r é t e , P o t r é n o .		

Imperative mode wanteth as in the Latin.

of

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Of Verbes Irregular, the second Conjugation in ER, as PODER.

PODER

Subjunctive mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	P u e d a , p u e d a s , p u e d a n .	P o s s i , p o s s i a , p o s s i a n o .	P o s s i m , &c.	I can or be able, &c.
Como	podíamos, p r e d a m i s .	Quando	Cum	
Imperf.	podíamos, podíades, podian.	podíamos, & potíamo , podíades, & potíades , podian, & potíano .	podíamo , & potíamo , podíate , & potíate , podían , & potíano .	potíamo , & potíamo , potíate , & potíate , potíano .
Como	podíamos, podíades, podian.	Quando	Cum	
First fut.	podíamos, podíades, podian.	podíamos, podíades, podíades, podíades, podían.	podíamo , & potíamo , podíate , & potíate , podíano , & potíano .	potíamo , & potíamo , potíate , & potíate , potíano , & potíano .
Como	podíamos, podíades, podian.	Podido.	Quando	Cum
Pluperf.	podíamos, podíades, podian.	uvíera, & uviéss e , uvíeras, & uviéss e s , uvíera, & uviéss e .	uvíera, & uviéss e , uvíeras, & uviéss e s , uvíera, & uviéss e .	uvíera, & uviéss e , uvíeras, & uviéss e s , uvíera, & uviéss e .
Como	uvíeras, & uviéss e s , uvíeras, & uviéss e , uvíera, & uviéss e .	Podido.	Quando	Cum
First fut.	uvíeras, & uviéss e s , uvíeras, & uviéss e , uvíera, & uviéss e .	uvíeras, & uviéss e m o , uvíeras, & uviéss e t e , uvíeras, & uviéss e .	uvíeras, & uviéss e m o , uvíeras, & uviéss e t e , uvíeras, & uviéss e .	uvíeras, & uviéss e m o , uvíeras, & uviéss e t e , uvíeras, & uviéss e .
Como	uvíeras, & uviéss e m o , uvíeras, & uviéss e t e , uvíeras, & uviéss e .	Podido.	Quando	Cum
Second fut.	uvíeras, & uviéss e m o , uvíeras, & uviéss e t e , uvíeras, & uviéss e .	hauerémo , haueréte , haueréno .	hauerémo , haueréte , haueréno .	hauerémo , haueréte , haueréno .
Como	uvíeras, & uviéss e m o , uvíeras, & uviéss e t e , uvíeras, & uviéss e .	hauerémo , haueréte , haueréno .	hauerémo , haueréte , haueréno .	hauerémo , haueréte , haueréno .

Infinitive mode Present tense.

Podér, *[Potére, P o s s i ,]* To be able.

Pluperfect tense.

Avér podido, *[Hauer potáro, P o t u i s s ,]* To have been able.

Gerund.

Pudiéndo, *[Poténdo, P o t é n d o ,]* In being able.

Participle.

Podido, *[Potáto, P o t é t o ,]* Able.

Futur. Estar por podér. Co lo que

gusta.

Querér. *Of Verbs Irregular of the second Conjugation in ER, as QVERER,*
in Italian, Volere,] in Latin Velle,] To will,
to loue, or to be willing.

Indicatiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	<p>yo QUIERO, tu quieres, aquel quiere, queremos, queréis, querán.</p> <p>Plu.</p>	<p><i>In VO' GLIO,</i> tu <i>voi</i>, <i>colui</i> mole, Plu. <i>vogliono</i>, <i>volete</i>, <i>vogliono</i>.</p>	<p><i>Volo</i>, <i>Vos</i>, &c.</p>	I will, or I will, &c.
Imper.	<p>quieras, quieras, quieras, queríamos, queríades, querían.</p>	<p><i>voléua</i>, <i>voléus</i>, <i>voléua</i>, <i>volenámo</i>, <i>volenáte</i>, <i>volenáno</i>.</p>	<p><i>Volebam</i>, &c.</p>	I did will, or I did toue, &c.
First Perf.	<p>quis, quisiste, quise, quisimos, quisistes, quisieron.</p>	<p><i>voll</i>, & <i>vols</i>, <i>vollisti</i>, <i>voll</i>, & <i>vols</i>, <i>volémmo</i>, <i>vollefes</i>, <i>vólfero</i>.</p>	<p><i>Volui</i>, &c.</p>	I haue willed, or I haue loued, &c.
Second Perf.	<p>He, as, a, hemos o^s avémos avéys, an,</p>	<p><i>ho</i>, <i>hai</i>, <i>ha</i>, <i>hablámoo</i>, <i>hanéte</i>, <i>hámoo</i>,</p>	<p><i>Volui</i>, &c. et ante.</p>	I haue willed, or I haue loued, &c. as above.
3rd Plu- Perfect.	<p>avías, avías, avías, avíamos, avíades, avían,</p>	<p><i>hauéua</i>, <i>hauéui</i>, <i>hauéua</i>, <i>hauéuamo</i>, <i>hauéuadet</i>, <i>hauéuano</i>,</p>	<p><i>Volueram</i>, &c.</p>	I had willed, or I had loued, &c.
Future	<p>querás, querás, querrá, querremos, querréys, querrán.</p>	<p><i>vorró</i>, <i>vorráti</i>, <i>vorrás</i>, <i>vorrémo</i>, <i>vorréte</i>, <i>vorráno</i>.</p>	<p><i>volam</i>, &c.</p>	I will, or shall will o ^s loue, &c.

Imperative mode.

Impe- ratu- mode.	queré tu, querá quel, querá mos, queré mos, querán,	<i>Quis-ter</i> <i>querá tu</i> <i>querá mos</i> <i>queré mos</i> <i>querán</i>	querí tu, rogá colá, rogá dímo, rogá late, rogá lano,	Latin wan- teth the I'm perature. mode.	Wish thou or long thou etc.

Of Verbes Irregular of the second Conjugation in ER, as QVERER.

Subsequent mode

	Spanis.	Italian.	Latin.	
quiera quieras quierer pref. Como guivan	Quiera, or Querfa, &c. Quieras, Quieren, Queramos, Querays, Queran.	Voglia, Voglii, Voglia, Vogliamo, Vogliate, Vogliano.	Vellem, &c. Cum	when I will or loue, &c.
supra mi vitis Aca e Imper fect Como	Quisiera, querria, quisiesse, Quisieras, querrias, quisiesse, Quisieren, querteria, quisiesse, Quisieramos, querriamos, quisiessemos, Quisierades, querriades, quisiescades, Quisieran, querrian, quisiescen.	Volessi, verei, & vorria, Volessi, vorreffi, Volesse, vorrebe, vorria, Volessimo, vorremmo, Volesse, vorreffe, Volessero, vorrebbono, &	Vellem, &c. Cum	When I would or loue, &c.
perfect Como	Aya, ayas, aya, Ayimos, Ayis, ayan.	Habbiá, Habbi, Habbiá, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Habbiáno.	Volum- rim, &c. Voluto. Cum	when I haue willed or ued, &c.
supra m r. miffee 2. pluper- fect Como	i. plurperf. Uviére, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviéss, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen,	Hauifi, or hauerei, Haueffi, or hauerifi, Hauesse, or haueribbe, Hauessimo, or hauerémo, Hauessé, or hauerifé, Haufero, or hauerubbono,	Voluto. Cum	when sem, &c. Cum I had will ied or loued &c.
first Future Como	Quisiére, Quisiéres, Quisiére, Quisiéremos, Quisiéredes, Quisiéren.	Haueró, Haueráti, Hauerá, Hauerémo, Hauerete, Haueránnio,	Volero &c. Voluto. Cum	when I shall will or loue.
second Future Como	Uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán,	Haueró, Haueráti, Hauerá, Hauerémo, Hauerete, Haueránnio,	Volero &c. Voluto. Cum	when I shall be willing or loue, &c.

Infinitive mode Present tense.

Querér,]	Volere,]	Velte,]	to will oz loue.
avér Querido,]	hauer Voluto,]	Voluisse,]	P̄fetterperfect tense.
Queriéndo,]	Volendo,]	Volendo,]	to haue loued oz beene willing.
Querido,]	Voluto,]	Voluto,]	Grund, Participle.
			In being willing oz louing.
			loued,willed.

fatini. ante de quitar
estar por dentro
Estirar por quitar

PONER. *Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as PONER, in Italian, Ponere, Porre, Mettere, in Latin, Ponere, Locare, to Put, to place.*

Indicative mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pref.	YO PONGO, tu Pónes, aquel Pón,	Io P'NGO, tu Póni, colui Pón,	Pono, &c.	I do put, &c.
	Ponémos, Pónes, Pónen.	Poni'mo, Pónete, Pónogo,	Pia.	
	Ponia, Ponias, Ponia,	Poneua, Poneui, Poneua,	Tonebam, &c.	I did put, &c.

Imperfect

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
	Poniamos, Poniades, Ponián.	Poneu'amo, Poneu'ate, Poneu'ano.	Ponebam, &c.	I did put, &c.

First Perfect

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
	Púfe, Pusifte, Púlo, Pusimos, Pusiftes, Pusíeron.	Pófe, Ponefli, Pófe, Ponefimo, Ponefle, Pófero.	Pofui, &c.	I haue put, &c.

Second Perfect

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
	He, El Ue, as, El Ue, a, Avémos, y hémos, Avéys, an,	Ho, Hai, Ha, Habbi'amo, Hauéte, Hámo,	Pofui, &c.	I haue put, &c.

Pluperfect

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
	Avías, Avias, Avía, Avíamos, Avíades, Avían,	Hauéua, Hauéui, Hauéua, Hauéamo, Hauéate, Hauéano,	Pofueram, &c.	I had put, &c.

Future

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
	Porné, o2 Pondré, Pornis, o2 Pondrá, Porná, o2 Pondrá, Pornémos, o2 Pondrémos, Pornéys, o2 Pondréys, Pornán, o2 Pondrá.	Poneró, & Porro, Ponerá, & Porrá, Ponerá, & Porrá, Ponerímo, & Porrémo, Poneréte, & Porréte, Ponnerámo, & Porámo.	Ponam, &c.	I shall o2 will put, &c.

Imperative mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
	Póntu, Pónga aquél, Pongámos, Poned, Póngan.	Pone tu, Pónga colui, Poni'mo, Pónete, Póngano.	Pone, Poneo, Ponat, Po- neto, &c.	put thou, put he o2 let him put, &c.

Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as PONER, in Italian, Ponere, Porre, Mettere, in Latin, Ponere, Locare, to Put, to place.

PONER

Subinitative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pref.	Póngas, Póngi,	Póngi,	Póna,	When I do put, &c
Como	Pongámos, Pongás, Póngan.	Poni'mo, Poni'ate, Póngano.	Poni'mo, Poni'ate, Póngano.	Ponam, &c.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Imper. fut.	Pusiferas, pomias o2 pondrias, pufiéste, Pusiferas, pomias o2 pondrias, pufiéste, Pusiferas, pomia o2 pondria, pufiéste.	Pusiferas, pomias o2 pondrias, pufiéste, Pusiferas, pomias o2 pondrias, pufiéste, Pusiferas, pomia o2 pondria, pufiéste.	Ponessi, Ponere, Ponessi, Ponere, ill, Ponessi, Ponerebbe,	Ponem, &c.
Como	Pusifámos, pomiamos o2 pondriamos, pufiéstemos Pusifádes, pomiaades o2 pondriades, pufiéstedes, Pusifáran, pomian o2 pondrian, pufiéßen.	Ponessimo, Ponermimo, Ponessi, Ponere, ill, Ponessi, Ponerebbe.	Ponem, &c.	Ponem, &c.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Perf.	ayás ayás ayás	Puéstlo.	Habbiámo Habbiáte Habbiáno	Pofuerim, &c.
Como	ayámos ayás ayán	Puéstlo.	Habbiámo Habbiáte Habbiáno	Pofuerim, &c.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pluperf. fut.	uvíeras o2 uvíeste uvíeras o2 uvíeste uvíeras o2 uvíeste	Puéstlo.	Haueréfi o2 Hauessi Haueréfi o2 Hauessi Haueréfi o2 Hauessi	Pofuerim, &c.
Como	uvíeramos o2 uvíestemos uvíredes o2 uvíestedes uvíerán o2 uvíesten	Puéstlo.	Hauerémmo o2 hauéssimo Haueréte o2 Hauessi Haberébbo o2 Hauessero	Pofuerim, &c.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
First Futur.	Pusiféremos, Pusiféredes, Pusiféren.	Puéstlo.	Hauerémo Haueréte Haueráno	Pofuero, &c.
Como	Pusiféremos, Pusiféredes, Pusiféren.	Puéstlo.	Haueró Hauerá Haterá	Pofuero, &c.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Second Futur.	Uvíeras o2 avré uvíeras o2 avrás uvíera o2 avrá	Puéstlo.	Haueró Hauerá Haterá	Pofuero, &c.
Como	uvíeremos o2 avrémos uvíredes o2 avréys uvíerán o2 avráan	Puéstlo.	Hauerémo Haueréte Haueráno	Pofuero, &c.

PONER,] Ponere, Mettere, Porre,] Ponere,] to Put.

Avér Puéstlo,] Hauer Poéstlo,] Pofuissi,] to haue Put.

Poniendo,] Ponendo,] Ponendo,] In Putting.

Puéstlo,] Poéstlo,] Poéstus,] Put.

After this manner are declined in all points Componer, to compose, yo Compóno, I do compose, yo Compúe, I haue composed, &c. Also Disponer, to dispose, yo Dispongo, I dispose, Dispué, I haue disposed. And Anteponer, to put before, yo Antepongo, I do put before, Ante-púe, I haue put before. Yo Proponer, to set out, to alleage, yo Propóno, Propúe.

HAZER. *Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as HAZER,
in Italian Fare, in Latin Facere, to doe, to make.*

Indicative mode,

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

*Of Verbs Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as HAZER.
Subjunctive mode.*

Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	Hágas, hágas, hágas, hágamos, hágas, hágan.	Faccia, faccia, faccia, facciamo, facciate, facciano.	Cum	faciam, etc.	When I do make or do, &c.
Imp. Como	hizíera, hizíaria, hizíesf, hizíeras, harias, hizíestes, hizíera, haria, hizíesf, hizíeramos, háríamos, hizíestimos, hizíerades, háríades, hizíesfedes, hizíerán, hárían, hizíesfén.	Quando facessi, farei, farla, facessi, faresti, farla, facessi, farebba, farla, facessimo, faremmo, facessisti, fareste, facessero, farebbono, farlano.	Cum	Facerem, etc.	When I did do make, &c.
Perf. Como	áya, ayas, áya, ayamos, ayás, áyan, hizíera, oz uvíesf, uvíeras, oz uvíesf, uvíera, oz uvíesf, uvíeramos, oz uvíestimos, uvíerades, oz uvíesfedes, uvíerán, oz uvíesfén.	Hecho. Quando habbia, habbi, labbia, habbiámo, habbiáte, habbiano, Quando hauef, oz hauef, haurefisti, oz hauef, haurebbbe, oz hauef, haueremmo, oz hauefimo hauerfisti, oz hauef, hauerbbono, oz hauefimo	Fat to.	Fecerim, etc.	When I have made oz done, &c.
First future. Como	hizíere, hizíeres, hizíe, hizíeremos, hizíeredes, hizíeren.	Hecho. Cum	Fecero, etc.	When I shall or will make oz do, &c.	
Second futur. Como	Uvíere, oz avré, uvíeres, oz avrás, uvíere, oz avrá, uvíeremos, oz avrémos, uvíerades, oz avréys, uvíeren, oz avrán.	Hecho. Haueró, Hauerázi, Hauerá, Haueremó, Hauerete, haueránno,	Fat to.	Cum Fecero, etc. et ante.	When I shall oz will make or do, &c.
Infinitive mode Present tense.					
Hazér,]	Fare,]	Fare, To do, to make.			
		Præterperfect tense.			
Aver hecho,]	Hauerfatto,]	Fecisti, To have made oz done, &c.			
		Future tense.			
Aver oz esperar de hazer,]	Dower fare,]	Facitum est, To make oz do hereafter.			
Estar	Effer fer fare,]	Facitum est, To make oz do hereafter.			
	Hauer a fáre,]	Facitum est, To make oz do hereafter.			
	Gerund.				
Haziéndo,]	Faciendo,]	In doing oz making, &c.			

Infinitive mode Present tense.

Hazér,] Fare,] Facere, To do, to make.

Preterperfect tense.

Aver hecho,] Hauerfatto,] Fecisse,] To haue made or done, &c
future tense

future tense. (Present tense.)

Ayer o^r esperar de hazer, *Douer faire,* *Facturum esse* To make o^r do heere aatter.
 Eßer per fare. *Per fare.* *Per fare.*

Estar *Hauer a fáre.*

Gerund.

Haciendo] Facendo,] Faciendo,] In doing or making, &c.

కుమారి

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

A Hazér,]	Disfare,]	Façam,]	To make or do.
De fer hécho,]	D'efter fatto,]	Façiu,]	To be made or don.
El que hâze,]	Facent,]	Faciem,]	One doing or making.
Hécho]	Fatto,]	Façiu,]	Participle of the Passive and Preter tense.
El que ha, or Espéra de hazér,]	Hauendo a fare,]	Facturus,]	Participle of the Future tense.
	Eſendo perſare,]		About to do, &c.

CABER

Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as CABER,
in Italian Capere, Latin Continere & Contineri,]
To containe, or to be contained.

Indicative mode.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latine.
Pres.	Yo Q V'E' PO, tu cábēs, aquel cábē, cabémos, cabéys, cábēn.	Io C A P I S C O, tu capisci, colui capisci, capidimo, capite, capiscono,	Ego contineo, tu contine, &c. Ego continor, tu contineris, &c. Thou containest, &c. Thou art contained, &c.
Imper. fct.	cabía, cabias, cabía, cabímos, cabíades, cabian.	capia, capiai, capiai, capidimo, capidate, capiano.	continbam, &c. continabar, &c. I did containe, &c. I was contained, &c.
First Perf.	cúpe, cupiste, cupo, cupímos, cupífies, cupíron.	capí, & capíi, capífi, capé capímmo, capífie, capírono.	continui, &c. contentus sum vel fui, &c. I haue contained, &c. I haue beene con- tained, &c.
Second Perf.	he as a avémos avéys. an	Ho, Hai, Ha, Habbiámo, Hauéte, Hámo,	continui, &c. contentus sum vel fui, &c. I haue contained, &c. I haue beene con- tained, &c.
Plus perfect.	avía avías avia avíamos, avíades avian	Hauéua, Hauéui, Hauéa, Hauéamo, Hauédie, Hauéano,	continueram, &c. contentus eram vel fu- eram, &c. I had contained, &c. I had beene con- tained, &c.
Futur.	cabré, cabrás, cabrá, cabrémos, cabréys, cabrán.	capero, capirá, capirá, capirémo, capiréte, capiráno.	continebo, &c. continebor, &c. I shall or will con- taine, &c. I shall or will be contained, &c.

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as CABER,

CABER.

Subiunctive mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
Pres. Como	Quépa, Quépas, Quépa,	Capifa, Capifci, Capifa,	Contineat, &c. Contineat, &c. Contineat, &c.
Imper. fct. Como	Quépámos, Quépays, Quépan.	Capiamo, Capiate, Capiſano.	Cum, &c. Cum, &c. Cum, &c.
Perfect. Como	Cupiéra, cabría, cupiéſſe, Cupiéras, cabrias, cupiéſſes, Cupiéra, cabría, cupiéſſe, Cupiéramos, cabriámos, cupiéſſemos, Cupiérades, cabriades, cupiéſſedes, Cupíeran, cabrián, cupiéſſen.	Capiſſi, capireris, caperia, Capiſſi, capiréſſi, caperia, Capiſſi, capirébe, caperia, Capiſſi, capiréſſi, caperia, Capiſſi, capiréſſi, caperia, Capiſſi, capirébe, caperia,	Cum, &c. Cum, &c. Cum, &c. Cum, &c. Cum, &c. Cum, &c.
Pluperf. Como	A'y, a áyas, aya,	Habbiá, Habbiá, Habbiá, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Habbiáno,	Cupitue- rim, &c. Contentus sim, &c. Cum, &c.
Futur. Como	Cupière, Cupières, Cupière, Cupíremos, Cupíredes, Cupíren.	Hauéſſi, & haueréſſi, Hauéſſi, & haueréſſi, Hauéſſi, & hauerébe, Hauéſſimo, & hauerémmo, Hauéſſe, & haueréſſe, Hauéſſero, & hauerébbono	Contineat iſſem, &c. Contentus sim, &c. Cum, &c.

Infinitive mode Present tense.

CABER,]	Capere, {	Contineat, to containe, &c.
avér Cabido,]	hauer capito, {	Preterperfect tense.
Cabiéndo,]	Capendo, {	Contentum Eſſe vel fuisse, to haue contained, &c.
Cabido,]	Capito,]	Gerund. Contineat, to haue been contained, &c.
		In containing, &c. I being contained, &c.

VER.

Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as VER, in Italian
Vedere, Latin Videre, to See.

Indicative mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	YO VEO, tu Vées, aquel Vée, Vémos, Véys, Véen.	Io Vedo & VEGGIO, tu Vedi, colui Vede, Pedímo, & Veggíamo, Vedete, Védito, & Véggono.	Vidéo, &c.	I do see, &c.
Imper. Com.	Via, Vias, Vía. Viamos, Viades, Vian.	Vedéua, & Vedéa, Vedéui, Vedéua, & Vedéa, Vedeuamo, Vedeuáte, Vedéuano, & Vedeuano.	Videbam, &c.	I did see, &c.
First perfect.	Vió, Vide, Viste, & Viste, Vió, & Vido, Vimos, Vistes, Viéron.	Vidi, & Vidi, Vidéti, Vidé.	Vidi, &c.	I have seen, &c.
Second perfect.	He as a Hémos avéys an	Ho Hai, Há, Habbiámo Háuite, Háno.	Veduto, & Visto.	I have seen, &c.
Pluperf. etc.	Avia Avias Avia. Aviamos Aviades Avian	Hauéua Hauéui, Hauéua, Hauéuamo Hauéuáte Hauéuano	Videram, & Vido.	I had seen, &c.
Futur.	Veré, Veráis, Verá, Verémos, Veréys, Verán.	Vederó, & Vederá, Vederá, & Vederá, Vederá, & Vederá, Vederémo, & Vederémo, Vederéte, & Vederéte, Vederáno, & Vederáno.	Videbo, &c.	I shall or will see, &c.
	Vé tu, Vé aquél, Veámos, Vé, Véan.	Vedi tu, Veda, & vegga colui, Veggíamo, Védis, Vidamo, & Véggano.	Vide, video, &c.	See thou, &c.

In the Subjunctive and Infinitive mode altogether as verbes a foregoing, as the Preperfect, viéra, & viére, visto, the Future viére, Infinitive vé, Participle visto, Solér

Solér, to be wont or accustomed. Indicat. Pres. yo Suélo, I am wont, tu Suéles, aquél Suéle, thou art wont, he is wont. Solémos, we are wont, Soléys, ye are wont, Suélen, they are wont. Imperf. Solia. Perfect. Soli. In like manner Dolér, to grieve, to be sorry, declined, yo Duélo, Dolia, Dolí, He Dolido, &c.

Of the third and last Conjugation of Verbs Irregular in IR or YR, as VENIR, in Italian and Latin Venire, to Come.

VENIR

Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	yo VEN GO, tu Viénes, aquel Viéne.	Io VEN GO, tu vién, colui viene.	Venio, &c.	I do come, &c.
Imperf.	Venimos, Venis, Viénen.	Veníamo, Veníte, Véngano.	Veniebam, &c.	I did come, &c.
First Perfect.	Venia, Venias, Venia.	Veníua, Veníui, Veníua.	Vení, &c.	I have come, &c.
Second Perfect.	Veníamos, Veníades, Veníen.	Veníuamo, Veníuáte, Veníuano.	Vení, &c.	I have come, &c.
Pluperf. etc.	Vine, Veniste, Vino, Venimos, Veniste, Veníeron.	Vénni, Vénnestí, Vénné, Venímo, Veníste, Venínero.	Veni, &c.	I had come, &c.
Futur.	He as a Hémos avéys an	Sono fui é Símo Sete Sono	Venuto, & Venido.	I have come, &c.
	Avia Avias Avia. Aviamos Aviades Avian	Ére évi era	Veneram, &c.	I had come, &c.
	Vé tu, Vé aquél, Veámos, Vé, Véan.	Venido.	Veneram, &c.	I shall or will come, &c.

Imperative

g 1

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Imperative mode.

Ven tu, Vénga aquél.	Vien tu, Vénga colui.	Veni, Venito, &c.	Come then, &c.
Vengámos, Venid, Véngan.	Venímos, Venite, Véngano.		

Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.	Latin.
Pres.	Vénga, véngeas, véngea, vengámos, vengáys, véngan.	Venga, venghi, venga, veniamo, veniáte, vénano.	Veniam, &c.
Imper.	Como viniéramos, véniamos, viniéfemos, viniéramos, véniamos, viniéfemos, viniéramos, véniamos, viniéfemos, viniéramos, véniamos, viniéfemos.	Quando venisti, veneristi, verreisti, venisti, veneristi, verreisti.	Cum venirem, &c.
Imper. fect.	Como ayá, ayás, ayá, ayás, ayá, ayás, ayámos, ayás, ayán,	Venido. Quando sia, sia & sia, Venuto, sia, sia & sia, Venuto, sia, sia & sia, Venuto,	Venerim &c.
pluper. fect., &c.	Como uviéramos, oz uviéfemos, uviéramos, oz uviéfemos, uviéramos, oz uviéfemos, uviéramos, oz uviéfemos,	Venido. sófisti, sarefisti, sófisti, sarefisti, sófisti, sarefisti, sófisti, sarefisti, sófisti, sarefisti, sófisti, sarefisti, sófisti, sarefisti,	Venissim &c.
First Futur.	Como venire, venire, venire, venire, veniremos, veniredes, veniremos,	Venido. Venero, &c.	When I shall or will come, &c.
Second Futur.	Como uviéremos, oz avrémos, uviéredes, oz avréys, uviéremos, oz avrémos,	Venido. sarefó, sarebó, Venuto, sarefó, sarebó, Venuto, sarefó, sarebó, Venuto,	When I shall or will come, &c.

Infinitive

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Infinitive mode Present tense.

Venir,]	Venire,]	To come.
		Præterperfect tense.
Sér venido,]	Essere venuto,]	To haue come.
		Futur tense.
Aver oj esperar de venir	Hauer a venire,	Douer venire,
		Participle of the Present and Active voice.
El que viéne,]	Venente,]	One coming.
		Participle of the Præter tense and Passive voice, &c.
Venido,]	Venido,]	Come.

These Verbes following in Ir, thus formed in the Present and Præterperfect Tense.

Infinitives.	Pres.	Præter.
Adormir, to fall asleep,	yo Adúerimo,	Adormí.
Dormir, to sleep,	yo Duérmo,	Dormí.
Avertir, to make,	yo Aviéto,	Avertí.
Arrepentir, to repent,	yo Arrepiento,	Arrepentí.
Cobrir, to recover,	yo Cébro,	Cobrí.
Concebir, to conceive,	yo Concibo,	Concebi.
Cernir, to lift meie,	yo Cigno,	Cerní.
Consentir, to consent,	yo Conlento,	Consentí.
Elegir, to choose out,	yo Elijo,	Elegí.
Fingir, to faine,	yo Finjo,	Fingí.
Gemir, to groane,	yo Gimo,	Gemí.
Mentir, to lie,	yo Miéto,	Menti.
Ungir, to anoint,	yo Uajo,	Ungí.
Salir, to go forth,	yo Sálgo,	Salí.
Diferir, to differ,	yo Diferó,	Diferí.

Imperfect of the Indicat. Diferia.
Imperfect of the Subiunct. Diferiria.
Sofir, to suffer, yo Sofro, Sofí.
Imperfect of the Indicat. Sofría.
Imperfect of the Subiunct. Sofriria.

The Compounds of this verbe Venir, Véng, are declined in every respect in all Modes and Tenses, thus: as it is, as Revenir, to returne, Revéngó, Revíng, &c. Convenir, to agree, to be expedient, yo Convéngó, Convíng. Devenir, to become, yo Devéngó, Devíng. Sobrevénir, to come upon suddenly, yo Sobrevéngó, Sobrevíng.

Of the third and last conjugation of Verbes Irregular in IR, & YR, as Dezir, in Italian Dire, Latin Dicere, to say.

DEZIR.

Indicative mode.

Spanish.		Italian.
Pres.	Digo, dizes, dice, dezimos, dezis, dizen.	Dico, dici, oj dí, dice, dicímo, dicíte, dicíen.
Imper.		

g 2

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Imper.	Dezia, dezias, dezia, Deziamos, dezidades, dezian.	<i>Dicéua,</i> <i>dicéas,</i> <i>dicéa,</i> <i>dicéamo,</i> <i>dicéades,</i> <i>dicéano.</i>	<i>Dicobam</i> Ec.	<i>I did say, &c.</i>
	dixe, dixiste, dixo, diximos, dixistes, dixeron.	<i>dixi,</i> <i>dixisti,</i> <i>dixi,</i> <i>dicemmo,</i> <i>dicestis,</i> <i>dixero.</i>	<i>Dixi,</i> Ec.	<i>I haue said, &c.</i>
First Perf.	há, as, a, hemos, aveys, án,	<i>Ho</i> <i>Hai</i> <i>Ha</i> <i>Habbiámo</i> <i>Hauéte</i> <i>Hánn</i>	<i>Dixi,</i> Ec.	<i>I haue said, &c.</i>
	avía, avias, avia, aviamos, avades, avian,	<i>Hauéua</i> <i>Hauéus</i> <i>Hauéua</i> <i>Hauenámo</i> <i>Hauenáde</i> <i>Hauénano</i>	<i>Dixi,</i> Ec.	<i>I haue said, &c.</i>
Second Perf.	diré, dirás, dirá, dirémos, dirás, dirán.	<i>diri,</i> <i>dirás,</i> <i>dirá,</i> <i>dirémo,</i> <i>dirás,</i> <i>dirán.</i>	<i>Dixi-</i> ram, Ec.	<i>I shall say, &c.</i>
	Dicho.	<i>Dicho.</i>	<i>Dicho.</i>	<i>I shall say, &c.</i>
Plu- perfect	Dicho.	<i>Dicho.</i>	<i>Dicho.</i>	<i>I shall say, &c.</i>
	avía, avias, avia, aviamos, avades, avian,	<i>Hauéua</i> <i>Hauéus</i> <i>Hauéua</i> <i>Hauenámo</i> <i>Hauenáde</i> <i>Hauénano</i>	<i>Dixi-</i> ram, Ec.	<i>I shall say, &c.</i>
Future	Dicho.	<i>Dicho.</i>	<i>Dicho.</i>	<i>I shall say, &c.</i>
	diré, dirás, dirá, dirémos, dirás, dirán.	<i>diri,</i> <i>dirás,</i> <i>dirá,</i> <i>dirémo,</i> <i>dirás,</i> <i>dirán.</i>	<i>Dicam,</i> Ec.	<i>I shall say, &c.</i>

Imperative mode.

Impe- rative mode.	Ditu, diga aquél, digámos, digád, digan.	<i>Di, oꝝ dicetu,</i> <i>dica colui,</i> <i>diceámo,</i> <i>dite,</i> <i>dícano.</i>	<i>Dic, di-</i> cito, Ec.	<i>Saie yon, &c.</i>

Note that you shall finde with god Authors Dezi for Dezid, in the second person plural number of the Imperative.

Subjunctive mode.

Pres. Como	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
	Diga, Dígas, Diga, Digámos, Dígas, Digan.	<i>Dica,</i> <i>Díci,</i> <i>Díca,</i> <i>Quando</i>	<i>Dicam, &c.</i>	<i>When I doe say, &c.</i>
Pres. Como	Cum			Imperf.

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Imper. fect.	Como	Dixéra, diría, dixéssse, Dixéras, dirías, dixelles, Dixéra, diría, dixéssse, Dixéramos, diríamos, dixésssemos, Dixérades, diríades, dixéssedes, Dixéran, dirian, dixéssen.	Quando	Dixémo, dixéssimo, Dixéfle, dixéssse, deria.	Cum	Dicerem, Ec.	When I did say, &c.
	Perf.	A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, ayáys, ayan,	dicho.	Habbiámo, Habbiádes, Habbiáno,	Detto.	Dixerim, Ec.	When I haue said, &c.
Super- fect.	Como	uviéra, oꝝ uviéssse, uviéras, oꝝ uviésses, uviéra, oꝝ uviéssse, uviéramos, oꝝ uviésssemos, uviérades, oꝝ uviéssedes, uviéran, oꝝ uviéssen.	dicho.	Hauéfimo, Hauéfle, Hauéfno,	Detto.	Dixissem, Ec.	When I had said, &c.
	First futur.	Dixére, Dixéres, Dixére,				Dixerim, Ec.	When I shall or will say, &c.
Como	Dixéremos, Dixéredes, Dixerem.				Cum		
	Second Futur.	uviére, oꝝ avré, uviéres, oꝝ avras, uviére, oꝝ avrá, uviéremos, oꝝ avrémos, uviéredes, oꝝ avréys, uviéren, oꝝ avrás,	dicho.	Haueró, Hauerá, Hauerá,	Detto.	Dixerim, Ec.	When I shall or will say, &c.

Infinitive mode Present tense.

DEZIR,	Dire,	Dicere,	to say, to tell.
Avér Dicho,	bauer Dicho,	Dixisse,	Pretter perfect tense.
			Future tense.
Avér de Dezir,	Efer per dire,	Dicturum esse,	to say hereafter.

Gerunds.

Deziéndo,	Dicendo,	Dicendo,	In saying.
			Participle of the Present tense and Actine voice.
El que Dize,	Dicente,	Dicent,	one telling or saying.
			Participle of the Pretter tense and passive voice.
Dicho,	Dito,	Dicito,	could, said, spoken.
			Participle of the Future tense.
El que ha oꝝ	Donendo dire		
Elspira de	Hauendo a dire,	Dicturne,	about to say hereafter.
Dezir,	Eſendo per dire,		

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

The Compounds of this verbe Dezir,Digo,in all pointg thorow all Mwdes and Tenses declined like the Simple,as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Pret.
Biendezir,to blesse, Maldezir,to curse,	yo Biendigo, yo Maldigo,	Biendixe. Maldixe.
In like soft these following thus,		
Conduzir,to conduct, Introduzir,to bring in, Induzir,to induce, Traduzir,to translate, Produzir,to produce, Salir,to go forth, Regir,to govern,	yo Conduigo, yo Introduigo, yo Indugo, yo Tradugo, yo Produzgo, yo Salgo, yo Rijo,	Conduixe. Introduixe. Induxe. Traduxe. Produce. Salix. Regi.

After the maner of Dezir, is this verbe Salir, to go out or make a fallie, declined, as in the Present tense of the Indicative mode yo Salgo, I go out, tu Sales, thou goest out, &c. Precter imperfect yo Salia, &c. First Precterperfect, Salí. Second Precterperfect, he Salido, &c. Pluperfect, avia Salido. Future, yo Salde. Imperative Salir, go thou out, Salga aquel, let him goe out, &c. Subiunctive Present tense, yo Salga, tu Salgas, &c. Precterimperfect, Saliera, Salidria, Salieffe, &c. Precterperfect, aya Salido. Pluperfect, uviera Salido. Future Salire. Infinitive Salir, Gerund Saliendo. Participle Salido.

So Seguir to follow, yo Sigo, Sigua, Sigui. He Seguido, avia Seguido, Seguiré. Imperative Sigue tu follow thou, Siga aquel let him follow, Sigamos let us follow, Seguid follow ye, Sigan let them follow. Subiunctive Present, Como yo Siga. Imperfect, Siguiéra, Seguiua, Seguiesse. Precterperfect, aya Seguido. Pluperfect, uviera Seguido. Future Seguire, &c. Infinitive Seguir. Participle Seguido. So in all points is Conseguir to obtaine, declined.

Sumir,to drench or overwolme, differing from Sumár, to sum vp, thus. In the Present of the Indicative all one yo Sumo, Imperfect yo Sumia, I did drench, yo Sumava, I did summe vp. First Perfect, yo Sumi; I haue drenched, tu Sumiste, aquel Sumio, yo Sumé, I haue summed vp, tu Sumiste, thou hast summed vp, aquel Sunio, he hath summed vp, &c.

Of the third and last Conjugation of Verbes Irregular in IR or YR, as YR, in Italian Ire or Andare, in Latin Ire, to Goe.

Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	V O Y, Vás, Vá,	V O & V A D O, Váis, Vá,	Eo, i, &c.	I goe, thou goest, &c.
	Vámos, Váys, Ván,	Andiámo, Andiáte, Váno.		
Imper. fect.	Yva, yvas, yva, yvamos, yvades, yvan.	Andáua, Andáui, Andáua, Andauámo, Andauáte, Andauano.	Ibam, &c.	I did goe, &c.
First Perfect	Fuí, Fuite, Fue, Fuimos, Fuites, Fueron.	Andéi, Andéfi, Andéi, Andámmo, Andáffe, Andáran.	Iui, &c.	I went, &c.

second

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

second perfect.	He, as a.	Y'do.	Sono, Sei, é,	Iui, &c.	I haue gone, &c.
	Hémos, avéys, an,		Sidmo, Sete, Sono,	Andato, Andati.	
pluper. fect.	Aví, Aví, Aví,	Y'do.	Era, Eri, Era,	Andato, Andati.	I had gone, &c.
	Aviámos, Aviades, Avian,		Erauámo, Erauáte, Eran,	Iueram, &c.	
Futur.	Yré, Yrás, Yrá,		Anderó, &c. Anderai, &c. Anderá, &c.	Ibo, &c.	I shall or will go, &c.
	Yrémos, Yréys, Yrán,		Anderémo, &c. Anderéte, &c. Anderáno, &c.		
	Vá, & Vc, Váya, Váda,		Vá, & Vc, Váda, Vadi,	Imperative mode.	
	Vámos, yá, Váyan.		Andiámo, Andiáte, Vádano, & Vádino.		

Vete, Vete, Get thee hence, Get thee hence.
With Authors this Verbe is sometime written with Y, sometimes with I.

Subiunctive mode.

Pres. Como	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	When I doe goe, &c.
	Váya, Váyas, Váya. Vámos, Váys, Váyan.	Vada, & Vadi, Vada & Vadi, Vada & Vadi.	Quando	
Imper. fect. Como	Yva, yvas, yva, yvamos, yvades, yvan.	Andáua, Andáui, Andáua, Andauámo, Andauáte, Andauano.	Fuéra, Yria, fuéssse, Fuéras, yrias, fuéssses, Fuéra, yria, fuéssse.	Andássi, Anderéi, Anderia, Andássi, Anderéfi, Andássi, Anderébe, Anderia.
	Fuí, Fuite, Fue, Fuimos, Fuites, Fueron.	Andiámo, Andiáte, Vádano, & Vádino.	Fuérámos, yriámos, fuéssemos, Fuérades, yriádes, fuéssedes, Fuérán, yrián, fuéssen.	Andássimo, Anderémmo, Andásse, Anderéfi, Andáffero, Anderébano, Anderiano.
Perf. Como	áya, áyas, aya, áyamos, áyays, ayan,	Iui, &c.	Y'do.	Irem, &c.
			Quando	Cum
			Sia, Sij Sia	Andato.
			Siámo Siáte Siáno	Andati.
			Y'do.	Cum

Pluperf.

Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Plu- perf.	uviéra, or uviéffe, uviéras, or uviéfes, uviéra, or uviéffe, uviéramos, or uviéfemos uviéras, or uviéfedes, uviéran, or uviéffen,	Y'do.	Quando Foffi, sarei Foffi, sarebi Foffi, sarebbe	Andato.	Iuissim, &c.	When I had gone, &c.
First future. Como	Fuérce, Fuéces, Fuérce, Fuéremos, Fuéredes, Fuéren.	Y'do.	Quando Saró, Sará Sará, Sará Sarémo, Saréte Saránnio	Andato.	Iuero, &c.	When I shall or will be, &c.
second future. Como	uviére, or avré uviéres, or avris, uviéra, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avráin,	Y'do.	Quando Saró, Sará Sará, Sará Sarémo, Saréte Saránnio	Andato.	Iuero, &c.	When I shall or will go, &c.

Infinitive mode Present tense.

YR,]	Andare, ire,]	Ire,]	to Goe.
Preterperfect tense.			
Aver y'do,]	Hauer andato,]	Iuisse,]	to haue Gone.
Future tense.			
Aver de y'do,]	Douer Andare,]	Iturum effe,]	to Goe hereafter.
Affer per Andare,]			
Gerund.			
Yéndo,]	Andando,]	Eundo,]	In Going.
Supines.			
Yr,]	Andare,]	Itum,]	to Goe.
De terydo,]	Effer Andato,]	Ius,]	to be Gone.
Participle of the Present tense and Active voice.			
El que va,]	Andante,]	Eun,]	one Going.
Participle of the Preter tense and Passive voice.			
Y'do,]	Andato,]	Gone,	

Of

Of Verbes Impersonals.

The Spanish as the French and Italian Impersonals are of the manner of the Latines, which want the first and second person, and are declined only in the third person thorow out all Modes and Tenses, as

Indicative mode.

Present.	Ay,	There is.
Imperfect.	Avia,	There was.
Perfect.	Ayo,	There hath bene.
Pluperf.	Aviá,	There had bene.
Future.	Avrá,	There shall be.
Imperat.	Aya,	Let there be.

Subiunctive mode.

Present.	Aya,	When there is.
Imperf.	uviéra, avría, uviéffe,	When there was.
Perfect.	aya Avido,	When there hath bene.
Pluperf.	uviéra or uviéffe Avido,	When there had bene.
Future.	uviére or Avra Avido,	When there shall be.

Note that the Spaniard almost continually blesht this Impersonall Ay as the French their *Il y a*, in English There is, as by observing you shall most vsually finde, as also this thirde person Comple thus declined, of Compli the Infinitive.

Indicative mode.

Present.	Cómple,	Decet, Oportet,	It becometh or behoueth.
Imperf.	Compliz,	Decebat, Oportebat,	It did becometh.
Perfect.	Complió,	Decuit, Oportuit,	It hath becometh, &c.
Pluperf.	a Complido,	Decuit, Oportuit,	
Future.	Complirá,	Decebit, Oportebit,	And so thorow the third person of the rest.

Indicative mode.

Present.	E,	There is.
Imperf.	era,	There was.
Perfect.	fue,	There hath bene.
Pluperf.	avia Sido,	There had bene.
Future.	Será,	There shall be, &c.

And so decline forward, as in the Subiunctive mode of the verbe Ser, Soy afore going in the third person only.

Indicative mode.

Present.	Es menester,	Oportet,	It behoueth.
Imperf.	era menester,	Oportebat,	It did behoue.
Perfect.	fue menester,	Oportuit,	It hath behoued.
Pluperf.	a fido menester,	Oportuit,	It hath behoued.
Future.	avia fido menester,	Oportuerat,	It had behoued.
	avra menester,	Oportebit,	It will behoue.

And so thorow the rest, &c.

This verbe Impersonall Plazer declined.

Present.	Plaze,	It pleaseth.
Imperf.	Plazia,	It did please.
Perfect.	Plúgo,	It hath pleased.
Pluperf.	a Plazido,	It hath pleased.
Future.	Plazerá,	It will please.
Imper.	Pléga,	Let it please.

Subiunctive

Declining of Participles.

Substantive mode.

Present.	Pléga,	When it doth please.
Imperf.	Pluguiera, Pluguieſſe,	When it did please.
Perfect.	áya Plazido,	when it hath pleased.
Imperf.	uviéta Plazido,	When it had pleased.
Future.	Pluguieſſe,	When it will please.

To forme an Impersonal of the Passive voice, you must take this particle Se, and the third person of any verb thus: which particle so added makes a verb Impersonall Passive, as

1 Pres.	Se Dize,	<i>{ Si dice or dices,</i>	<i>Dicitur,</i>	<i>It is said or spoken,</i>
Imper.	Se Dezia,	<i>{ Si dicēas or dicēas, &c.</i>	<i>Dicebatur, &c.</i>	<i>It was said or spoken</i>
2 Perfect	Se Dixo,			<i>etc.</i>
2 Perfect	Se a Dicho,			
Pluper.	Pluſe, Savia Dicho,			
Futur.	Se Díxá.			

Of Participles.

Participle of the Present tense and active signification are made of the thirde person present tense of the Indicative mode of the same Verb, putting before it the Relative, El que, as El que Revéla, revealing, Latin *Revelans*: El que Entiende, understanding, in Latin *Intelligens*: El que oye, hearing, in Latin *Audiens*.

Participles of the Preter tense and passive signification end in ado, ido, or ydo, which in the first conjugation are formed of the thirde person of the Present tense of the Indicative mode, by adding to do, as, Revela, revelado: Ama, amado: Castiga, castigado: and in the seconde and thirde conjugation of the same Present tense, by chaunging e, into ido, and ydo, as Entiende, entendido: Lee, Leydo: Creé, creydo: Pide, pedido.

But for the Irregular (according to the nature of the worde) without rule, as Fatus, fecho, made, Dicho, sape, spoken.

The Future tense with this Verb Ha, or Espéra, and the Infinitive of the Verb, as El que ha or Espéra de revelar, Entendér, oy: *Revelaturus*, *Intellecturus*, *Auditurus*, about to reueale, about to understande, about to heare.

Participle of Present tense and active signification, El que revela, entiende, oye, Latin *Reuelans*, *Intelligens*, *Audiens*, Revealing, understanding, hearing.

Participle of the Preter tense and passive signification, Revelado, Entendido, oydo, Latin *Revelatus*, *Intellectus*, *Auditus*, Revealed, understood, heard.

Participle of the Future tense, El que ha oydo de Revelar, Entendér, oy, Latin *Revelaturus*, *Intellecturus*, *Auditurus*, to reueale hereafter, to understand hereafter, to heare hereafter.

Of Aduerbes.

I haue handled before the lower parts of speach declined. Now come we to the other lower undeclined, called Indeclinable, beginning first with the Aduerbes, whereof some in the Spanish tong are formed of townes of the Feminine gender in a, as are almost all the Aduerbes of Quantite, as Alta, high; Altamente, highlie; Graciola, graciolamente, gracioulite; Luenga, luengamente; in Latin *Die*, long; whiche manner of forming the Italian likewise obserueth, as *Gratiolamente*, *Longamente*, *Saviamente*, so doth the French, making the worde to ende in *ment*, as *Gratiellement*, *Longement*, *Sagement*. Wherefore I thinke good to set downe the Aduerbes following and the rest: first, the Spanish, then Italian, after French, next Latin, and last English: euerie one separated one from another with this crooked line thus, — Aduerbes some be

Of Aduerbes.

of Qualite.	<i>{ Fielmente,] Fidemente,] Fidelemente,] Fideliter,] Faithfully.</i>
	<i>{ Buénamente, or bien] Bene,] Bien,] Bene,] Well.</i>
	<i>{ Malamente, or mal,] Male,] Malamente,] Male,] Ill.</i>
	<i>{ De buén gana [Di buona voglia,] Voluntiers, de bon cuer,] Libenter,] Willingly.</i>

of Quantite.	<i>{ Mucho,] Molto,] Beaucoup,] Multum vel Multo,] Much.</i>
	<i>{ Poco,] Poco,] Peu,] Parum vel Paululum,] Little.</i>
	<i>{ Mucho mas,] Via plus,] Beaucoup plus,] Multo magis,] Much more.</i>
	<i>{ Mas,] Plus,] Magis,] More.</i>
	<i>{ Por de mas,] Trop,] Trop,] Nonni,] to Much.</i>

of Time.	<i>{ Oy,] Hogg,] Aujourd'huy,] Hodie,] To day.</i>
	<i>{ Ayer,] Hier ieri,] Hier,] Hier,] Yesterday.</i>
	<i>{ Mañana,] Domani,] Demain,] Cras,] To morrow.</i>
	<i>{ Antier,] Anteri,] Deuant hier,] Pridie,] The other day.</i>
	<i>{ El dia siguiente,] Il segiente giorno,] Le lendemain,] Postridie,] The next day after to morrow.</i>

	<i>{ Mucho ha,] Molto fa,] Dea long temps,] Iamdiu,] Long since.</i>
	<i>{ Poco ha,] Poco fa,] Naguera,] Iamdiu,] Little since.</i>
	<i>{ Agóra,] or,] aceit heure,] Iamiam,] Even now.</i>
	<i>{ Ante,] manz,] Deuant,] Ante,] Before.</i>
	<i>{ Luégo,] Preſo,] Tosi,] Soudainement,] Illico, statim,] Soorthwith, by and by.</i>

	<i>{ Nunca,] Giamaic,] Jamais,] Nunquam,] Never.</i>
	<i>{ Quando,] Quando,] Quando,] Quando,] when.</i>
	<i>{ Siempre,] Sempre,] Tousjors,] Semper,] Always.</i>
	<i>{ Entóces,] Ahora,] Donques,] Tunc,] Then.</i>
	<i>{ Miéntras,] Mentre,] Cependant,] Interim,] In the meane while.</i>

	<i>{ Súbito,] Subito,] Soudainement,] Subito,] Sodatinip.</i>
	<i>{ Muchas veces,] Molte volte,] Mille stiate,] Fort souuent,] Sepe] Verie often.</i>
	<i>{ Pocas vezés,] Rade volte,] Peu souuent,] Raro,] Seldom.</i>
	<i>{ Algunas vezés,] Qualche volte,] Quelquefois,] Aliquando,] Somtimes.</i>

	<i>{ Qualche stiate,]</i>
	<i>{ A Q.VI',] Qui, quiasci,] Icy,] Hic, Iuc,] Here.</i>
	<i>{ Ay, illi, alla,] In, la, col, qui,] La, audela,] Ille,] There.</i>
	<i>{ A Donde,] Dove, oure,] Ouz,] Vbi, quo,] Whither, where.</i>
	<i>{ De Donde,] Onde, donde,] Dont, d'ou,] Vnde,] from whence.</i>

	<i>{ Acá,] Di, qua,] Par icy,] Hac,] this way.</i>
	<i>{ Acullá,] Cola per costá,] Par dela,] Ista, istuc,] that way.</i>
	<i>{ De aquí,] De qui, Quini,] D'icy,] Hinc,] from hence.</i>
	<i>{ De allí, de allá,] Indi, di, la, Quindi,] Dela,] Illine,] from hence.</i>
	<i>{ Dentro,] Dentro, entro,] Dedans,] Intra,] within.</i>

	<i>{ Fuera,] Fuori, di fuori,] Hors, de hors,] Foris, foras,] without.</i>
	<i>{ Delante,] In antxi,] Deuant,] Ante,] Before.</i>
	<i>{ Atrás,] Diéter,] Derrier,] Post,] Behinde.</i>
	<i>{ A parte,] De banda,] al'c art,] Separatim, seorsum,] aside, a part, by it selfe.</i>

	<i>{ Arriba,] Sopra, di sopra, In, su, suo,] Enhaut,] Sursum,] Above.</i>
	<i>{ Abáixo,] Ingui, guisso, sotto, di sotto,] En bas,] Deorsum,] Beneath.</i>
	<i>{ Cerca,] Intorno, dattorno,] Environ,] Circiter,] About, nigh unto, almost.</i>
	<i>{ Cabe, lunto,] Apresso, diancino,] Preſt, aupres,] Prope,] Nere unto.</i>

	<i>{ Léxos,] Lontano, di lungib,] Loin,] Procul,] Far off.</i>
	<i>{ Encima,] Su, sopra,] Sur, desus,] Super,] Upon.</i>
	<i>{ So,] Sotto, di sotto,] Delsoubz,] Subter,] Under.</i>

	<i>{ SI, as Si Senor,] Si, as Signore Si,] Ouy, as ouy Mounſieur,] Ita, ita Domine, Yea, yeas.</i>
	<i>{ Cierto, ciertamente,] Certo, certamente,] Certes,] Certe, certó,] Truly.</i>
	<i>{ En verdad, verdaderamente,] In veritate, vero, in vere,] Vrayment, en verite, certaine-</i>
	<i>{ ment,] Verè,] Truly, in truth, verily.</i>
	<i>{ Tambien,] Si bene, etiando, ancor, anche,] Si bien, ainsi, aussi,] Etiam, quoque,] as-</i>

	<i>{ well.</i>
	<i>{ Antes,] Pintostos,] Pluſtoſt,] Potius,] Rather.</i>
	<i>{ of</i>

of Denying.	[<i>No</i> , <i>Non, non, ne,</i>] <i>Non, neny, pas, pointe,</i>] <i>Non, hand, minime,</i>] <i>Not.</i> [<i>Nida, No nada,</i>] <i>Niente, nulla,</i>] <i>Rien,</i>] <i>Nihil,</i>] <i>Nothing, nothing at all.</i> [<i>Ni, Tam poco,</i>] <i>Asy, Ni, ne,</i>] <i>Negue,</i>] <i>Neither.</i>
of numbering.	[<i>V N A V E Z,</i>] <i>Vna bolta, Vna fiata,</i>] <i>Vne fois,</i>] <i>Semel,</i>] <i>Once.</i> [<i>Dos veces,</i>] <i>Due volte,</i>] <i>Deux fois,</i>] <i>Bi,</i>] <i>Twice.</i> [<i>Tres veces,</i>] <i>Tre volte, tre fiate,</i>] <i>Trois fois,</i>] <i>Tres,</i>] <i>Three, &c. as in the Pronome</i> [<i>before of Numbers.</i>] [<i>Muchas veces,</i>] <i>Spesso, ve, moite fiate,</i>] <i>Beaucoup de fois,</i>] <i>Sepe,</i>] <i>Often times.</i> [<i>Pocas vezés,</i>] <i>Itade volte,</i>] <i>Rarement,</i>] <i>Raro,</i>] <i>Seldom.</i>
of Shewing.	[<i>H E A Q V I,</i>] <i>Ecco,</i>] <i>Voicy, voila,</i>] <i>Ecco,</i>] <i>Behold.</i>
of Encouraging.	[<i>E A, E A P u e s,</i>] <i>Su, corri, ggio,</i>] <i>Sus, courage,</i>] <i>Age, perge,</i>] <i>Go to then.</i>
of entreating.	[<i>M A S,</i>] <i>Pin,</i>] <i>Plus,</i>] <i>Plus,</i>] <i>Moze.</i> [<i>Mucho mas,</i>] <i>Molto Più, molto assai,</i>] <i>Beaucoup plus,</i>] <i>Molto magis,</i>] <i>Much moze.</i> [<i>Demasiado,</i>] <i>Trop, di favechia,</i>] <i>Trop,</i>] <i>Quamum,</i>] <i>Too much.</i>
of Reminiſing.	[<i>M E N O S,</i>] <i>Meno,</i>] <i>Moins,</i>] <i>Pauolimius,</i>] <i>Lesse.</i> [<i>Poco a Poco,</i>] <i>Poco, a Poco,</i>] <i>Pea u Peu,</i>] <i>Pauolim,</i>] <i>By little and little.</i> [<i>Falso,</i>] <i>Tran, fiano,</i>] <i>Tout bellement, Petit a petit,</i>] <i>Sensim,</i>] <i>Soft and faire.</i>
of Washing.	[<i>O X A L A,</i>] <i>O Dio raglia, Dio rosseſſe,</i>] <i>Pleust a Dicu,</i>] <i>Vtinam,</i>] <i>Would to God,</i> [<i>I pray God.</i>] [<i>O Si, I of, Os, si,</i>] <i>Illeſt a Dieu que,</i>] <i>Vtinam,</i>] <i>Would to God, I pray God.</i>
of Asking.	[<i>P O R Q V E,</i>] <i>Perche?</i>] <i>Pourquoys?</i>] <i>Quare?</i>] <i>Why? Wherfore?</i> [<i>Que?</i>] <i>Che?</i>] <i>Quoy?</i>] <i>Quod?</i>] <i>What?</i> [<i>Donde?</i>] <i>One?</i>] <i>Ou,</i>] <i>Vbiqna,</i>] <i>Where.</i> [<i>Aldone,</i>] <i>Duo,</i>] <i>Ou,</i>] <i>Qe,</i>] <i>Whether.</i> [<i>De Donde,</i>] <i>Onde,</i>] <i>D'ou, dont,</i>] <i>Vnde,</i>] <i>From whence.</i> [<i>Quando?</i>] <i>Quando?</i>] <i>Quand?</i>] <i>When.</i>
of Doubting.	[<i>Q V I S A,</i>] <i>Forſt, a, ſo,</i>] <i>Fortuitement,</i>] <i>Fortafſſe,</i>] <i>Perhaps.</i> [<i>Vorventura,</i>] <i>Perauentur,</i>] <i>Perauenture,</i>] <i>Fortafſſe,</i>] <i>Peraduentre, Perhaps.</i>
of Order.	[<i>D E S P I V E S,</i>] <i>Pol, dipoi, dipoi, doppo,</i>] <i>A pres, depuis,</i>] <i>Post,</i>] <i>Aſter.</i> [<i>Allende de ésto,</i>] <i>Ottra a ciò, otra a quies,</i>] <i>Ontra ce, d'aduanages,</i>] <i>Pratera,</i>] <i>fur-</i> [<i>thermore,</i>] <i>Allafine,</i>] <i>Enfin, Finablement,</i>] <i>Tandem,</i>] <i>Aſt length.</i>
Likeness.	[<i>C O ' M O,</i>] <i>Comme,</i>] <i>Comme,</i>] <i>Sicut, velut,</i>] <i>As.</i> [<i>Aſſi,</i>] <i>Cof,</i>] <i>Ainiſi,</i>] <i>Itaſſic,</i>] <i>So.</i>
Chance.	[<i>A C A S O,</i>] <i>Pordicho,</i>] <i>Acaso,</i>] <i>Fortuitement,</i>] <i>Fortuito,</i>] <i>By chance, by hap.</i>
Comparaison.	[<i>M A S,</i>] <i>Pin,</i>] <i>Plus,</i>] <i>Plus,</i>] <i>Moze.</i> [<i>Ménos,</i>] <i>Menos,</i>] <i>Moins,</i>] <i>Minus,</i>] <i>Lesse.</i> [<i>Mucho mas,</i>] <i>Via pin, Assi piu,</i>] <i>Beaucoup, d'auantage,</i>] <i>Molto magis,</i>] <i>Much moze.</i> [<i>Mucho ménos,</i>] <i>Molto meno,</i>] <i>Beaucoup moins,</i>] <i>Molto minus,</i>] <i>Much leſſe.</i> [<i>Mejor,</i>] <i>Megliore,</i>] <i>Mellicur,</i>] <i>Melius,</i>] <i>Better.</i> [<i>Pior,</i>] <i>Peggior,</i>] <i>Pis,</i>] <i>Pior,</i>] <i>Worſe.</i> [<i>Todo del mundo,</i>] <i>Piu del mondo,</i>] <i>Toule mond,</i>] <i>Maxime,</i>] <i>Chifely.</i>
Wering.	[<i>I V N T O,</i>] <i>Iuntamēne,</i>] <i>Inſieme,</i>] <i>Enſemble,</i>] <i>Simul,</i>] <i>Together.</i>
Wether.	A PARTE, <i>ſ Separatamente,</i>] <i>Al'escart,</i>] <i>ſ Separatim, ſcorſim,</i>] <i>A ſunder</i>
Wering.	A PARTE, <i>ſ Separatamente,</i>] <i>Al'escart,</i>] <i>ſ Separatim, ſcorſim,</i>] <i>A ſunder</i>
Wosing.	[<i>M A S A yna,</i>] <i>Piu iſtoſo,</i>] <i>Pluſtoſt,</i>] <i>Potius,</i>] <i>Wather.</i> [<i>Mucho mas,</i>] <i>Molto meglis,</i>] <i>Beaucoup mieux,</i>] <i>Potius,</i>] <i>much Wather.</i>
Variety.	[<i>T O D A v e z,</i>] <i>Tutta via,</i>] <i>Touſeſois,</i>] <i>Tamen,</i>] <i>Notwithstanding.</i> [<i>Aúnque,</i>] <i>Come, che, Etiando che,</i>] <i>Anchor thes,</i>] <i>Encore,</i>] <i>Etiāſiſ,</i>] <i>Although.</i>

Of a Coniunction.

*withdرا = [A L O مénos,] Alménos, almáneó,] Au moins,] At the least.
wing. سل = [Solo,] Solo,] Seul,] Sulém,] Dñeip.
wing. Porque,] Par acciöe che,] Pourceque,] Proterea,] For that.*

Of a Conjunction.

A Coniunction is that which knitteth and ioineth parts of spech together, and is with the Spaniard almost in the same manner as the Latin, sauing they haue not so many, but yet some are

of coupling Y, and E,] e,] et] ee,] Bnd.
 as Como,] Come,] Comme,] e,] Bg.
 Tambien,] Ancor, Ancho, Et iando,] Si bien, ainsi, aussi,] Etiam, Quoquo,] Also.

Note that E properly is not a Spanish Coniunction, but onely vsed for the Y, when the wodde following beginneth with a Y, because two YY, shoule not come together, Laley e la Justicia, and not Laley y la Justicia, but otherwise alwaies vse Y.

of Diction= $\{ \text{Ni }] \text{Ne, }] \text{Ne, }] \text{Ne, } \text{Neque, }] \text{Neither.}$
 ing. $\{ \text{O, }] \text{O, ouero, }] \text{Ou, }] \text{Aut, } \text{Ve, } \text{Vel, } \text{Seu, } \text{Sive }] \text{Either.}$

of Causing. [PORQVE,] *Accioche, Percioche, Pourceque*] *Propterea quod,*] For that, wherfore.

of Condition = { SI,] Se,] Si,] Si,] E.
 ning. { Dado que,] Se così,] Si aussi,] Si ita,] E so.

of Except- { [SINO,] *Se non*,] *Sinon*,] *Não*,] *Except, if not,*
 ting. { *Mas*,] *Ma*,] *Mais*,] *Quin*,] *But*,
 { *Otraménto*,] *Aletramente*,] *Autrepent*,] *Aliquin*,] *Otherwise*.

of Dimini= [ALOMENOS,] *Almeno, Almanc,*] Au moins,] *Saltem,*] At least.
thing. [AVNQVE,] *Ancorche, Quantunque, ? Encore,*] *Etsi quamquam,*] *Bi-*

A Preposition.

Preposition. The Spanish hath the same use of Prepositions as the Latin haue, sometimes by composition with another word, as Bolvér, to turne; Rebolvér, to ouerturte; Hazér, to do; Rehazér, to renewe, &c. Sometime by apposition (as the Latin doe) by putting the Preposition before the Name, as Ala corte, to the court; Pore Rey, for the king; En la glégia, in the church.

Note. Note that this Proposition Do, or Does, always makes the word that it is
joined with, of a quite contrary signification, as Hazer, to do: Deshazer, to bind
Atar, to tie or bind: Desatar, to untie: Canfado, swear: Descanfado, restking: Dicha,
happines: Desdicha, unhappines, misfortune: And so in the French, Faire, to do:
Desfaire, to bind: Lier, to bind, Delier, to unbinder, &c. Propositions of the Spanish
thus,
A, [A.] Ad, [A.] Ad, [To, as A fe, ala fe,] Afde, Afte,] Par ma foy,] Per fidem,] By my
truth.
De, [D.] deda,] De, du,] De,] Of or from,] as De la corte,] De la corte,] Dupalais,]
From the court.
Para,] Per,] Pou,] Propter,] For, as Parami,] Per me,] Pour moy,] Propter me,]
For me.
Por,] Per,] Par,] Per,] For, by or thorow, as Por mi vida,] Por mia vita,] Par ma
vic,] Per vitam,] By my life.

4

[Centra]

Of Syntaxis.

Contra,] *Contra, Incontra,] Contra,] Contra,] Against.*
Contra el estado,] Contra el fisco,] Contra el fisco,] Contra el fisco,] Against the estate.
 CABE] *Presto, Appresto,] Prest, aprest,] Prese, as Cabe la ciudad,] Appresto la ciuda,] Apres de la ciuda,] Prese de la ciuda,]* *Prese, as Cabe la ciudad,] Appresto la ciuda,] Apres de la ciuda,]*
 FRONTERO,] *Rimpetto,] Vis a vis,] Eregione,] Ouer against.*
Rimpetto,]
 HASTA,] *Fino, Sino,] Julques,] Fjque,] Until.*
Infino, Infino,]
 HA'ZIA,] *Ver, verbo,] Envers,] Versus,] Towards.*
 SOBRE] *Sopra, Disopra,] Suc,] Super,] Upon.*
In su, j Sus,]
 ENCI'MA,] *En il pomete,] En vertice,] Upon the top.*
 SO,] *Sotz, distoz, Gue,] De fous,] Subter,] Under.*
 ENTRE,] *Fra, Infra,] Entre,] Inter,] Betwæne.*
 ATRAS,] *Dietro,] Derrier,] Pone,] Behinde.*
 ADELANTE,] *Dinan, Juan,] Deuant,] Ante,] Before.*
 Cerca, Acerca,] *Circa, Attorno,] Enuron,] Circum, Circa,] About.*
 Fuera,] *Fuori,] Hors, dehors,] Friis, Foras,] Without doez.*
 Dentro,] *Dentro,] Dans, dedans,] Intus,] Within.*
 Con,] *Con,] Auec,] Cum,] With.*
 Sin,] *Son,] Sans,] Sine,] Without.*
 Delde,] *From or sinc, as Delde la muerte, &c. From, or since the death, &c.*

These following are bled with the Preposition De, with them, as
 Aquende de la casa,] *Di qua de la casa,] Par deçá de la maison,] Ex hac parte domus,] On this side the
 Allende,] *De la,] Par de la,] Ex altera parte,] On the other side.* (house)
 Al deder d'oz Entorno,] *Intorno, Attorno,] Enuron,] Circum, Circa,] About.**

Of an Interiection.

A N Interiection declareth a sudden passion of the minde. The Spaniards use
 not so often Interiections or sudden passions of the minde; neither in their
 speech nor writing, as doth the French, or Italian, and yet they haue these follo-
 wing: *Hunc he of*
 Rejoycing,] *O Bueno,] Oh bene,] He bien, hñ deá,] Eaux, val,] O well.*
 Laughing,] *Hi, hi, hi, o2 Ha, ha, ha,] Ab, ab,] Ah, ch,] Ha, ha, he,] Ha, ha, he.*
 Wondering,] *O Iesùs, o2 O oh, oh,] Oh, oh,] Pape,] O Jesus god Lord helpe me.*
 Grieving,] *A Y, ay,] Ah, ab, abime,] Las, olis, helas, ach,] Heu, hei,] Las, out alas.*

Of Syntaxis.

Definition S yntaxis is a due coupling together of Speech according to the right Rules of
 Grammar, which the best Authors, both Ancient and Moderne haue still
 used in writing and speaking.

S yntaxis, or the Greek word αντίστασις, which is *Con, and τάσσω, ordino, quasi, coordinate,* which is construction or agreement.

But for that the Spanish (as the Italian and French) being derived from
 the Latin (as before said, and still keepe as great affinitie as either and tyme, both
 proceeding (as *Adchimiles* saie) from Quicquidius, or as no one can gainsay from the
 mother earth, or as a different Plant grafted on a strange Stocke or tree: It must
 necessarily be ordered by many Rules of the Latin, which here to repeate were lost
 labour and in vaine, as hath seemed to the most part of all those learned, that of any
 these bulgar languages haue written: Finishing their Grammars at the ende of
 the eight parts of speech and leaving this quite out: which order I haue obser-
 ved, referring the Latin Reader to the Rules of the Latin Syntaxis for this part
 of Grammar, and other to due obseruation in reading good Authors: Writing in-
 crease to both, to their owne contents, and my selfe hereby to haue furtherred both,
 to mine owne chiefe desire.

F I N I S.

I Haue for the Learners vse desirous of the tongue, read ouer diuers Authors, ga-
 thering out of them the hard phrases and manner of speech, the vncouth sayings,
 together with some prouerbes, as they fall in their places (which are the difficultie
 of the tongue) and explained them in English, commonly setting downe first the
 English word for word as the Spanish is, then this is for Latin, *id est, that is to say,* for
 the sence and meaning, then the line and the leafe of the booke, that by these the
 Learner may the better iudge of their like when he meeteth with them. For the leafe
 I set downe *fol.* and *a.* signifieth the first side of the leafe, and *b.* the second, *lin.* signifi-
 eth what line, and the figure after *fol.* telleth the leafe, and *lin.* what line it is. If you
 finde *pag.* it is to finde what page of the booke. If you see *1. part.* it is for the first vo-
 lume or part of the booke, and *2. part.* for the second, &c.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbes out of DIANA
 of Monte Mayor in 16. printed at Antwerpe 1580.

Los de mas. fol. 3. b. lin. 14. *The rest.*
*Las horas que se sobravan. fol. 4. b. lin. 2. The howers which remained, or The rest of the
 howers.*
Tomando a vñez fol. 4. b. lin. 6. Taking by fits or turnes.
*Passar por el pensamiento. fol. 4. b. lin. 14. and 7. a. lin. 25. and 26. b. 2. To enter into the minde or
 thought.*
Tam pócole dava pena. fol. 4. b. lin. 17. Neither did it grieue or trouble him.
A vuestro salvó. fol. 6. b. lin. 17. Your selfe bring safe, or without your owne danger.
*Como los uvilte a las manos. fol. 10. b. lin. 5. How came they to your hands: or how came you
 by them?*
Por tu vida. fol. 10. b. lin. 21. By thy life, i. I pray thee hartily.
*Tomar de cõro. fol. 10. b. lin. 23. To take by quire, i. To haue by memorie, hart, or without
 booke.*
*Favorécer me a mi fol. 11. b. lin. 5. and Me movíera a mi fol. 2. a. lin. 8. To favour me and did moue
 me. Here the Spanish beth two accusatiue cases after the verbe, both of the person: and not
 as the Latin, one of the person and another of the thing.*
Despues que te fuiste. fol. 11. b. lin. 21. After thou wentest.
*Yo fui, y tu, te, aquél fué, nos fuimos, fuiste, fueron. I went, thou wentest, he went, we
 went, we went, they went. This Fuy, fyste, commeth of the Iñinutre mode hñ, to goe, and the
 very fame Fuy, fyste, fye, &c. commeth of the Iñinutre mode Sér, to be: but loke backe in the
 Grammar and compare the two verbes together.*
De ay a un poco. fol. 11. b. lin. 28. A pretie while after.
Quies del fol. 12. a. lin. 20. Where is he: what is become of him?
Quando se pône el Sol. fol. 13. a. lin. 8. When the sunne sets.
*Fuera de mi, fuera de ti, fuera de si. fol. 13. b. lin. 14. Besides my selfe, besides thy selfe, besides
 himselfe, or Out of my wit, out of thy wit, out of his wit.*
Ten punto. fol. 13. b. lin. 24. Stay, hold, stop, Give me leave a little.
*Le va bien, le va mal. fol. 15. a. lin. 7. It goes well with him, it goes ill with him. He is well,
 he is ill.*
Mucho a. A good while since.
*Mucho avia, mucho tivo, mucho avrá. fol. 17. a. lin. 4. It was a good while agoe, it hath beene a
 good while since, it shall or will be long agoe.*
Poco ha o2 Poco fa. A little while agoe, or a little since.
*Poco avia, Poco tivo, Poco avrá. It was a little since, it hath been but a little since, it shall or
 will be but a little while agoe.*
Muchos dias acá. Pocos dias acá. fol. 17. a. lin. 7. Many daies since, a few daies since.
Mucho tiempo hñ. Poco tiempo hñ. A good while agoe, a little while agoe.
Grandes dias hñ. Pocos dias hñ. A great while agoe, a few daies past.
Cosa en la vida fol. 17. a. lin. 12. Any thing in the world.
Hacer a cosa. fol. 17. b. lin. 21. To extreme of, to make matter of.
Muchos ay, o2 Ay muchos. fol. 20. a. lin. 6. There are many.
Que os tengo dicho. fol. 20. a. lin. 29. Which I haue told you.
Quiso mi ventura. pag. 21. a. lin. 11. My fortune would haue it so.
*Que de oro no les llevára ventaja. fol. 21. a. lin. 20. verbatim. That the vantage of golde did not
 carrie*

Diana de Monte mayor.

carrie it awa from them. *i. Gold did not excede them in brightnes.*

Yu al nro. 1. ag. 21. b. lin. 28. verbatim. *To goe to ones hand.* *To stop, to stay, to let or to hinder one from doing any thing.*

Dedichado de mi. *fol. 22. b. lin. 6. verbatim.* *Wretched of me.* *i. Wretched that I am, unhappie creature.* *I. Woe is me, wretched that I am.*

No te haze mucho al calo. *fol. 22. b. lin. 11.* *It makes not much matter to thee, it concernes thee not much.*

De veras. *fol. 22. b. lin. 20.* *In earnest.*

De burlas. *fol. 22. b. lin. 20.* *In jest.*

Toda via. *fol. 23. a. lin. 2.* *Notwithstanding.*

Hacer de industria. *fol. 23. a. lin. 22.* *To doe of set purpose.*

Plague a Dios. *fol. 23. b. lin. 3.* *I would to God.*

De lo y a ocho dias. *fol. 24. b. lin. 6.* *Eight daies hence.*

No ay cosa en la vida. *fol. 25. a. lin. 14.* *There is nothing in the world.*

Añi y do por obra. *fol. 26. b. lin. 11.* *So he did put it in practise.*

Vy quejóis por a cuentos. *fol. 26. a. lin. 21.* *Let sighes goe by millions.*

Y quejá a Dios que, &c. *fol. 40. b. lin. 4.* *And would to God that, &c.*

Ambos a dos. *fol. 40. b. lin. 5.* *Both.*

Fuera de si. *fol. 47. b. lin. 14.* *Wchideth himselfe, out of his wits.*

Venir a las manos. *fol. 47. b. lin. 16.* *To come to blomes or fight.*

Como en ello es fuera la vida. *fol. 48. a. lin. 11.* *As if theron his life lay.*

A la cuesta della. *fol. 48. b. lin. 13.* *To gither therewith.*

Mal iya a aquell. *fol. 49. a. lin. 13.* *Woe be unto him.*

Poner el negocio a las manos. *fol. 50. b. lin. 24.* *To bring the matter to blomes or fight.*

Que en otru cosa no entendia sino en, &c. *fol. 51. b. lin. 24. verbatim.* *Wchideth in any other matter*

vera yde not, i. which thought on nothing els but, &c.

Se dixó dormir. *fol. 52. a. lin. 25. verbatim.* *Let himselfe or herselfe sleepe, fell asleepe.*

No se qual me creá. *fol. 53. b. lin. 19.* *I know not which I may heleue.*

De volunt. *fol. 53. b. lin. 25. verbatim.* *It ought to be, it could not be otherwise.*

Basta lo hecho. *fol. 54. a. lin. 16.* *It sufficeth that it is done.* *Basta lo dicho, it is enough that is*

once spoken of, so needs no more words.

Como lipo calla. *fol. 54. a. lin. 19.* *How shes knew to holde her tong, how well she could be*

mute, and not answere a word.

Ni por penlamente en ella. *fol. 54. b. lin. 13.* *By no meanes.*

Queríme mas que a si. *fol. 55. b. lin. 1.* *To loue me more or better then himselfe, or herselfe.*

No es de cauallero. *fol. 55. b. lin. 26.* *It is not the part of a Gentleman.*

Tener en mucho, Tener en poco. *fol. 56. a. lin. 2.* *To esteeme much, or to set much by, to set lit-*

tie by, or esteeme little.

Y quenélo dixo, Selo lipo encarecer de manera. *fol. 56. a. lin. 25.* *And he that told it, could tell*

how to aug-ment and ampele it in such sort.

Alli yde por obra. *fol. 56. b. lin. 24.* *So I put it in practise, or set it awoke.*

Alli me he de derech a la corte. *fol. 57. a. lin. 3.* *And so I went straight to the court.*

Coñis no po, o gustáis le oy. *fol. 57. a. lin. 5. verbatim.* *Things not little taletfull to heare, i.*

Things not a little delightfull to heare.

En la boz, o2 en la bila conofey. *fol. 57. a. lin. 25.* *I knew him by his voice of speech.*

La mafica diya a otra no a mi. *fol. 58. a. lin. 20.* *The musick pleased to another and not to me.*

Le déva mucho. *fol. 58. a. lin. 9. verbatim.* *Wchideth him much, he is much beholding to him.*

Ello vellaca de ausencia delhize las cosas. *fol. 58. a. lin. 15.* *This rascals absence doth undo all.*

No ay ninguna que no pide por vos. *fol. 58. b. lin. 3.* *There will be none which is not lost*

in loue for you, i. which will not be ready to runne madde for you.

Mo, a bonita, o2 bonica. *fol. 61. b. lin. 5.* *A god wench, a fine trull, made of girle.*

Dai leños de la verád. *fol. 62. b. lin. 13.* *To be wode or fare off from the truth.*

Parceré me hya. *fol. 62. a. lin. 12.* *It did seme unto me.* *This manner of speach in Spa-*

nish is by the figure Epenfis, which is the putting in of a letter or syllable in the middle of a

word, as in this Parceré me hya, o2 Parcereria me. *It did seeme to me.*

Dai vns palmada. *fol. 63. a. lin. 13.* *To give ones selfe a pat or blow on the brest, or els where*

in signe of wondring.

Crangear favores. *fol. 66. b. lin. 5.* *To hord vp fauours.*

Perdido per amores. *fol. 67. a. lin. 22.* *Lost for loue, made in loue.*

Si fuells servido. *fol. 68. a. lin. 9.* *If he pleased, or liked well of.*

Vn desmayo con que avia dado el alma. *fol. 68. a. lin. 27.* *A swooning or traunce, with which*

he had greeen vp the ghost.

Pluguerá a Dios. *fol. 68. b. lin. 12.* *Would to God.*

Liegá al alma. *fol. 69. a. lin. 7.* *To enter into the soule, to greeen at hart.*

Diana de Monte mayor.

Tomó la mano de respondelle. *fol. 69. a. lin. 9.* *Tooke vpon her to answere her, or stode vp be-*

fore the compaine to answere her.

Pulieron la mesa. *fol. 71. a. lin. 15.* *They couered the table.*

El sol se pone. *fol. 72. a. lin. 5.* *The sun was set.*

Que ayá siio parte. *fol. 74. a. 20.* *Wchideth haue the cause.*

Echar lo en burlas. *fol. 74. a. lin. 5. verbatim.* *To cast it off in jesting, i. To cast it out.*

A todos hazia ventaja. *fol. 76. a. lin. 6. verbatim.* *We did excell all, he did excede or overpass all.*

Rogando muy encarecidamente. *fol. 76. b. lin. 8. verbatim.* *Requesting very earnestly, very instantly.*

Fulana tiene buen ayre. *Fulano, es capatacador.* *fol. 79. a. lin. 23 & 24.* *Such a one hath a good*

grace or countenance, such a one is dauncer of a gigge.

Puello en tanta obligacion. *fol. 80. a. lin. 20.* *Being so much beholding or bound.*

Echida a la sombra. *Echido a la cama.* *fol. 82. b. lin. 2.* *Lade in the shadowe, cast on the bed.*

Tuvieste por bien. *fol. 82. b. lin. 8. verbatim.* *Did holde for good, i. Thought well of, or tolde in*

god part.

Mal iya amor, su arco y su fiesta. *fol. 83. a. lin. 11.* *The distill take Loue, his bowe and his shaft.*

Pasilloz hia, o2 ia fol. 83. b. lin. 7. *Wchideth passe them ouer.* *This spech by the figure Epen-*

lisis, which is a putting betweene of a letter or syllable in the middle of a word, as Pasilloz, o2

Pallallos, o2 Pallalos, i. Wchideth Pasilloz another figure called Antistichon,

which is a writing one letter for another, by changing R of the Infinitive mode into L, a thing

most vsual in the Spanish, as here Pasilloz for Pallalos, o2 Habillalos, o2 Habillalos, to speake

unto them: Velloz, o2 Velloz, to se them: Dezilloz, o2 Dezilloz, to tell them: Oyilles, o2 Oyilos

o Oyres, o2 los, to heare them.

Aviendo ydo quanto media legua. *fol. 89. a. lin. 21.* *Having gone about halfe a league.*

Se fue su paflo a paflo. *fol. 84. a. lin. 6.* *Went very fast and fersurely.*

Los demas de los dias. *fol. 86. b. lin. 2.* *The rest of the daies.*

Y en las manos sondos vasos hechos a la Romana. *fol. 90. b. lin. 3.* *And in their hands each one a*

small beffell made after the Romane fashion.

Mefas puchas. *fol. 91. a. lin. 21.* *Tables couered of lade.*

Piedras engafidas. *fol. 91. b. lin. 1.* *Stones encrached.*

Alcir, o2 quitar la mesa. *fol. 91. b. lin. 4.* *To take by the table.*

Vistieron a Felisimena, vna ropa y baquina de fina grana, recamadas de oro de canutillo, y aljó-

far, yn cuiria, y mangas de tela de plata. *fol. 94. a. lin. 5.* *They apparelled Felisimena with a gowne and*

pettico of fine scarlet colour imbrodered with imbost or rased golde and pearle, a cassocke and

flaxes of cloth of silver.

Ei ohón de redezilla. *fol. 94. a. lin. 14.* *To cole of net woyke.*

Las parades eran labridas de obra Mofica. *fol. 94. b. lin. 16.* *The wals were wrote Jewish*

wooke o2 Turkye woyke without imageries.

Duarte. *fol. 98. b. lin. 19.* *Edward.*

Mirald bien. *fol. 101. a. lin. 1.* *Behold him well, by the figure Metaphis, which is a changing*

places of letters, o2 Mirald very common in the Spanish in the Imperatiue mode the secunde

person plurall number, as Leelido, o2 Leed lo, Rade ya se it: Dezillo, o2 Dezid lo, Tell him that:

o2 Dezilloz, o2 Dezid les, Tell them: so Mirald o2 Mirad la, Behold her: Miraldas, o2 Mirad las,

Behold them. *fol. 103. a. lin. 3.*

Ojos verdes y rafados. *fol. 103. a. lin. 28.* *Faire and great eyes.*

Delde al borea al austro. *fol. 104. a. lin. 22.* *From the north to the south.*

En quanto se hacia hora de cenar se fueron a una alameda. *fol. 105. a. lin. 16.* *And while supper*

time came they went to a groue of poplars.

Mediente la qual. *fol. 109. a. lin. 24.* *By meane whereof.*

Gentil hombre y bien tallado. *fol. 110. a. lin. 13.* *A proper man and well shaped, and not for as*

English men call gentleman.

Cavallo rúedo rodado. *fol. 110. a. lin. 15.* *A horse dapple gracie.*

Traya en la cinta vn alfanje. *fol. 110. a. lin. 19.* *He caried at his girdle a Turkie sword.*

Traya en el braço yquierdo. *fol. 110. a. lin. 24.* *He caried on his left arme.*

Bolvér sobre si. *fol. 110. b. lin. 21.* *To come to ones selfe out of a traunce, astonishment or the*

like.

Tocar un cuerno. *fol. 111. a. lin. 6. verbatim.* *To touch i. To winde a hozne.*

Llevárel camino de los compañeros. *fol. 111. a. lin. 19. verbatim.* *To tarris the way of his fel-*

lowers, i. To take the same way, to be serued with the same fauour, to drinke of the same cup.

Túvo lo en mucho. *fol. 113. a. lin. 9.* *He much esteemed it.*

De ay algunos dias. *fol. 116. a. lin. 18.* *From hence a few daies.*

Tenérme campo. *fol. 119. a. lin. 9. verbatim.* *To hold me field.* *i. To be able to stand with me or*

fight with me.

Hazér campo. *verbatim.* *To make field.* *i. To combat, to fight,*

No sé lo que hará de mi. *fol. 119. a. lin. 18.* *I know not what shall become of me.*

Diana de Monte Mayor.

Tened entendido. fol. 126. b. lin. 2. verbatim. Hold understand. i. Understand.
 Ambas a dos. fol. 126. b. lin. 27. Both.
 Pléga a Dios fol. 130. b. lin. 24. I would to God.
 Por lo poco que se dáva por el. fol. 133. a. lin. 23. For the little esteeme he made of him.
 No se me da náda. verbatim. It giveth nothing to me. i. I care not.
 Aví como cinco o seys méles. fol. 147. a. lin. 3. It shall be some five or six monethes.
 Cosa en que tan poco te yva fol. 149. a. lin. 19. A thing which so little did import thee.
 Me a dido de mano. fol. 150. a. lin. 19. He hath taken his leave of me.
 Filda de unas montañas fol. 157. b. lin. 13. verbatim. the skirt. i. The side or hanging of an hill.
 Vino a dár en un bosque muy grande, de verdes alisos y azebaches alzaz poplado. fol. 158. a. lin. 2.
 He came to light into a wood very great, sufficiently stroyed with græne fallowes and wilde olives.
 Y de súbito fue a dár con los ojos en una muy hermosa ciudá, que desde lo alto de una sierra, que de frente estiva. fol. 158. a. lin. 6. And bypon a sudden he espied a faire citie from the top of a mountain, which was right against them.
 Se fué su paflo a paso un lenda que juntó a l río yá házia la parte. fol. 158. b. lin. 6. He went faire and soft in a path which lead nere the riuer toward that part, &c.
 Sobre las cabeças, tenian fendas gurinaldas de verde yedra. fol. 158. b. lin. 18. Upon their heads they had each of them seuerall garlands of græne iuie.
 Con cierto desdén y un dár de mano. fol. 160. a. lin. 12. With a certainte disdaine and putting from with the hand.
 Dize pues que si muger es finada que me case con el? fol. 160. a. lin. 24. Saith he, seeing that his wife is dead, that I marrie with him?
 Parec en medio bivir. fol. 190. b. lin. 8. To live at the next wall, but one wall betweene.
 Parar mientes fol. 193. a. lin. 21. To marke, to hæde.
 Plazer acabido. fol. 226. a. lin. 12. Complete or full toy or pleasure quite ended.

Diana de Monte Mayor 2. part.

Encamíná obras a personas de lustre. fol. 2. a. lin. 5. To direct workes to persons of fame.
 Si Dios fuere servido. fol. 2. b. lin. 7. verbatim. If God shall be terner. i. If it shall please God.
 De mi grádo jamas entendería sino en solo loíros. fol. 3. a. lin. 7. By my god will I would never do any thing else but praise pou.
 Vaya fuera toda vrogancia fol. 3. b. lin. 12. All pride set aside.
 Como a cada uno complia. fol. 7. b. lin. 2. As was mete for every one.
 No les comple yíte. fol. 7. b. lin. 20. It is not mete they goe.
 Con el fi del matrimoni. fol. 8. a. lin. 26. With the answering to the minister yea at the mariage.
 Vámonos fol. 10. a. lin. 10. Let us leue, for Vámonos.
 Dexémonos fol. 19. a. lin. 22. Let us leue, for Dexémonos nos.
 Amatará la sed fol. 10. a. lin. 20. To quench thirst.
 Por una cuéltia abaxo. fol. 11. b. lin. 11. Downehill.
 A vézes. fol. 21. a. lin. 1. By turnes, by fits.
 O vala me Dios. fol. 22. a. lin. 6. God helpe me.
 Pluguera a Dios fol. 22. a. lin. 17. I would to God.
 Dado que fol. 22. b. lin. 21. Grant that, suppose that.
 Mercé d'efaláda fol. 28. b. lin. 26. A notable curteze.
 El traydor del Cupido fol. 36. b. lin. penultima. The traitor Cupide.
 Tener en mucho fol. 38. b. lin. 1. To esteeme much of.

Wordes, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbes out of *Celestina* in 8.

printed at Antwerpe En la oficina Plantiniana

Anno 1595.

De mas. pag. 1. lin. 5. Duer and abone, beades, moreouer.
 Recibido tienen. pag. 3. lin. 6. verbatim. They hold received. i. They have received.
 Tener la firma del autor. pag. 4. lin. 21. To haue the authoress name to it.
 Leido. pag. 8. lin. 9. Read it, by the figure Metathesis, which is a changing of places of letters, very common in the Spanish, in the seconde person plurall of the Imperative mode, as this Leido for Leed lo, as Caltigaldo, chalke him, for Castigado lo, Pedilde, require of him, for Pedidle, Oylde, heare him, for oyde le.
 A todo correr deveis de huir. pag. 10. lin. 11. verbatim. With all running away you ought to auoide. i. With all haste possible torun or shun.

En

Celestina in Octauo.

En quien quépa esta differéncia. pag. 17. lin. 14. In whom may be contained or found this difference.

Conféja tras de fuego. pag. 13. lin. 3. A tale by the fireside, an old wiues tale.
 Ofrecedo tener. pag. 22. lin. 13. verbatim. To hold offered. i. To haue offered.
 Vete, vete de ay. pag. 23. lin. 8. Get thee hence, Get the hence.
 Abatiste el girafalce. pag. 23. lin. 28. The Girafalcon bated.
 Los Diablos te ganen. pag. 24. lin. 1. The Devil take thee.
 Que cosa es? pag. 24. lin. 20. What is the matter?
 Dexárelle he? pag. 25. lin. 2. Shall I leave him?
 Matárelle ha. pag. 25. lin. 3. He is to kill himselfe, or he will kill himselfe.
 Desbráve, Madure. pag. 25. lin. 5. Let him pacifie or calme himselfe, let him ripen or come to a head.
 Si deante me tiene. pag. 25. lin. 22. If he haue me before him.
 Mudar el pelo malo. pag. 25. lin. 29. To change ill fortune.
 Ves lo aquí. pag. 26. lin. 15. Here is he.
 De la apariencia a la existencia. pag. 27. lin. 14. From that which seemes to be, to that which is indeed.
 No cabe en coraçón de mi amo. pag. 28. lin. 6. It is not within the compasse of my masters hart.
 Que por la boca le sale a borbotones. pag. 28. lin. 6. But that it must bubble out of hys mouth.
 Ha, ha, ha, & hi, hi, hi. pag. 28. lin. 14. Voices of laughing.
 Asciárti tiros. pag. 28. lin. 17. To aime.
 El cozióte. pag. 30. lin. 27. It touchte you, it made you smart.
 Meter por los agujeros. pag. 32. lin. 25. verbatim. To put into holes, i. to take in at windowes.
 Desque se descubren. pag. 33. lin. 12. From the time they discouer themselves.
 Catió de mi. Mesquino de mi. pag. 34. lin. 20. Wetch that I am.
 Asfíme medre Dios. Asfíte medre Dios. pag. 34. lin. 23. verbatim. So God make me thryne, i. So God helpe me or prosper me.
 Ductos tenemos. pag. 34. lin. 8. We haue mowringes in hand.
 Ojos verdes y rafgados. pag. 35. lin. 14. Fair and great eyes.
 La tez liza y lufrona. pag. 35. lin. 24. The stain smooth and cleere.
 Buen ándo haze esto. pag. 37. lin. 8. This makes god going forward.
 Dias grandes ha, & Muchos dias ha. pag. 37. lin. 5. The god white since.
 Quedé Dios con v. m. pag. 37. lin. 9. God be with you, or God remaine with you.
 Dioso vaya con v. m. pag. 37. lin. 29. God conduct, or by your speed.
 Vaya v. m. con Dios. Go in Gods name.
 Ques del? pag. 38. lin. 15. What is become of him? where is he?
 Hi, hi, hi. pag. 39. lin. 2. A voice of laughing.
 Tres dias ha. pag. 39. lin. 4. It hath bene thre daies.
 Vo, for Vo. pag. 39. lin. 12. I goe.
 Por mi vida. Por tu vida. pag. 39. lin. 27. I pray thee hartily.
 Quedate a Dios. pag. 40. lin. 11. God remaine with you, or keepe you.
 Sey, for Se tu. pag. 40. lin. 21. We thou.
 No pude desear bien, de que no te cupiéste parte. pag. 41. lin. 1. I could not se much as desire, as with any godnes, in whiche the part was not contained therein.
 Si quiera, for Solamente. pag. 41. lin. 4.
 Geló prometi. pag. 41. lin. 8. I promised him it or that, for Se lo prometi.
 Tha, tha, tha. pag. 42. lin. 3. The noise by hearing of the knocking at a doore.
 O que comedor de huevos assados. pag. 43. lin. 21. Oh what a eater of roasted eggs.
 De que le servias? pag. 44. lin. 4. In what place or office diddest thou serue her in?
 Curar de punto. pag. 47. lin. 18. To heale or cure with stitching by, as with needle and threed.
 Tengote lo en gracia, or mercé. pag. 48. lin. 24. I thanke thee for it.
 Como quiera. pag. 49. lin. 29. Howe soever.
 Dar en el fiel. pag. 51. lin. 4. To hit the prickle at shooting.
 Para misantiquada. pag. 51. lin. 1. By my halldome.
 Do vino el alno, verma el albarda. pag. 51. lin. 13. verbatim. Where the asse is come, the packe saddle will come. i. where the greater doth yede, the lefe must of necessarie come after.

After I had read ouer *Diana de Monte mayor*, and other authors, gathering out the hardest speeches and explaining them for the learners vfe, and being come thus farre in *Celestine*, as you see, it came into my imagination that running thorow him and such other hard authors, by vnfoldeing so open to euerie ones view

view the difficultest points in the toong, might breed some dislike in men of mine owne profession (to whom I wish as to my selfe) as alio little thankefullnes of others, who hauing their turns serued, do commonly verifie this prouerbe, (Eaten bread is forgotten.) I thought good not to deale all at once, but to keepe some to sweeten their mouthes heereafter, as they shall be desirous heereof, and the rather, for that notwithstanding all this and more paines to, with cost out of my purse, neglecting my profession and liuing, I haue alreadie before I came neere the preffe, tafted and had some experiance of some of the greater sorte (if wealth and place haue that prerogatiue) which never saw any thing of my dooing in their life, or heard mee speake, by discourteous dealing enough to discourage mee from the publishing of any thing, to pleasure or profit many; yet for the better minded, and more courteous disposed, I haue go so farre with the Englishing heereof, and some prouerbes following, whose curtesie if friendly I finde, may cause me to the farther vnfolding of this language to his farther content.

WVords, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbs out of *La vida de Lázaro de Tormes* in 8 printed in Antwerpe En la officina Plantiniana, Anno M. D. XCV.

Lo que uno no come, otro se pierde por ello. pag. 2. lin. 3. That which one eateth not, another is lost for it, or losgeth after it.
 No sé mas santo que mis vecinos. pag. 5. lin. 7. Not to be more holy then my neighbours.
 Achaçaron a mi padre ciertas sangrías mal hechas en los costales. pag. 7. lin. 18. They laid to my fathers charge certaine tipping the sides of the sacas.
 Atar a los buenos. pag. 8. lin. 7. pag. 91. lin. 1. To leane or stay ones selfe vpon the god.
 Eschar la sogata tras el caldero. pag. 10. lin. 12. verbatim. To cast the eye after the caldron. i. To cast the helme after the hatchet.
 Vale ce portu. pag. 11. lin. 6. verbatim. We of awaile for thy selfe. i. Shift for thy selfe.
 Par de una cofa. pag. 11. lin. 26. Just even with any thing.
 Mas da el duro que el desfundo. pag. 19. lin. 28. verbatim. More giveth the hard then the naked. i. More giveth the infernal turnidgcon then he that hath it not to give.
 Escapé del trueno y di en el Relampago. pag. 28. lin. 23. I escaped the thunders and fell into the lightning.
 No poder tener en las piernas. pag. 30. lin. 25. Not to be able to stand vpon the legs.
 Dar el reloj la una. Dar las dos, las tres, &c. pag. 49. lin. 15. The clocke to strike one, two or three.
 Ha dada una. Han dado las dos, las tres, &c. pag. 50. lin. 25. It hath stroke one a clocke, two a clocke, three a clocke.
 En un credo. pag. 57. lin. 14. In the twinkling of an eie.
 Una de vaca. pag. 62. lin. 1. Vacates forte.
 La bolla sin maldita la blanca. pag. 65. lin. 16. The diuell a penny in his purse.
 Oy dia. pag. 65. lin. 24. At this day.
 Quebrámos el ojo al Diablo. pag. 66. lin. 7. Let vs breake the necke of the Devil.
 Voto o boro a Dios. pag. 70. lin. 4. I sa care by God.
 Delrey abaxo. pag. 71. lin. 6. From the king downward.
 Romper caparos. pag. 77. lin. 13. To wearre out shooes.
 Lanzar del el demónio. pag. 85. lin. 8. To cast out the diuell from him.
 Matar con un hombre. pag. 92. lin. 6. To fight with a man.
 Quien bien te hará o se yá o se morirá. pag. 94. lin. 7. He that shall or will doe thee a god turne, either he will be gon, or he will die.

WVords, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbs out of *Menosprécio de la Corte*, or in French Mespris de la Court in 16. printed An. M. D. XCI. per Ichan de Tournes.

Yr me a mia la mano. pag. 70. lin. 19. verbatim. To goe me to my hand. i. To hinder, let or stop my selfe.
 Ir por elatijo. pag. 93. lin. 14. To goe t he shottest way.
 Dar de mano a la corte. pag. 127. lin. 20. To shake hands or take leane of the Court.

Dár la corte a Dios. pag. 137. lin. 10. To bid the court farewel.
 Andar en cuerpo. pag. 197. lin. 1. To goe in hole and doublet without a cloake.
 No es de pañar entre renglones. pag. 200. lin. 20. It is not to be left obscurely, or it is to be plainly written or set downe.
 Verdura para la olla. pag. 202. lin. 19. Herbes for the pot, potherbes.
 Bevér de buces. pag. 209. lin. 5. To drinke as an ox or such beastes.
 Jugár al herrón. pag. 227. lin. 13. To play at coites.
 Coner en toro. pag. 228. lin. 3. To batte a bull.
 A paréy medio, pared en medio, com. Plaudo. fol. 4. b. lin. 18. pag. 234. lin. 13. The next wall to one, But a wall betwene.
 Clerigo sin breviario. pag. 259. lin. 8. A priest without a bireuarie.
 Ruár calles. pag. 273. lin. 14. To gad about the streets.
 A pénas. pag. 289. lin. 20. Hardly.
 Embocárla la bola al juego de argolla. pag. 360. lin. 2. To cast the bowle into the hole of the ring at that play of Argolla, A ring.
 Tirar coches. pag. 380. lin. 10. To kiche.
 Traer de tema la gorra. pag. 388. lin. 12. To set his hat to the god aieward, on one side the head.
 Sospecho que son pocos, y muy pocos, y aun muy poquitos y muy repositos. pag. 406. lin. 1. I suspect there are few and very few, yea most few, yea fewest of all.

WVordes, Phrases, Sentences, and Prouerbes out of *Floresta Espanola*, in 16. Printed in Salamanca, 1592.

Estoy maravillado. Epist. dedicatoria. pag. 2. lin. 9. I wonder, I maruelle.
 El linage donde no avia corona, nunca medrava. fol. 6. b. lin. 4. verbatim. That kindred that had had a crowne in it never thriued, i. a priest.
 Mas parece chichón que Cardinál. fol. 7. b. lin. 1. It seemed rather a whelk or puse then a scripe blache and blaw.
 Rízias cámaras. fol. 11. a. lin. 18. Strong stollings.
 Macho de silla. fol. 13. a. lin. 5. A nagge.
 Un hombre de gran memoria sin letras, tiene rica y hufo y no estambre. fol. 21. a. lin. 1. A man of great memorie without learning, hath a rocke and a spindie, and no stiffe to spin.
 Bolár vna grulla o ave. fol. 43. b. lin. 5. To sit at the Herron.
 Guilar la comida. fol. 43. b. lin. 6. To dese meate.
 Desenfillar. fol. 53. b. lin. 19. To put out of a chaire. Also to unsaddle.
 Vnos moços de espuelas. fol. 6. b. lin. 1. Lackies or footemen.
 A ell Pago o capaldo o encapaldo. fol. 6. b. lin. 13. Either geide this page or give a cloake.
 Tal círeda vaca. fol. 74. b. lin. 2. Such a chaire was vacant.
 Llamo me fol. 76. a. lin. 15. I call my selfe, or I am called.
 Puntos de caparos. fol. 85. b. lin. 14. The litchies of shooes, or size of shooes, as nines, tens, &c.
 Al frey lo verés. fol. 93. a. lin. penultima, verbatim. By crying you shall see. i. By yrofe you shall finde.
 Os demande la palabra. fol. 94. b. lin. 2. Let him challenge your sword or promise.
 Hazér quartos. fol. 90. a. lin. 3. To quarter.
 Parár mientes. fol. 500. a. lin. 7. To marke.
 Caldo. fol. 102. b. lin. 5. Wash, pottage.
 Hazér la barba. fol. 112. a. lin. 16. To trim the beard.
 De buena gana. fol. 126. b. lin. 5. With a god will.
 Dezar gráciás. fol. 234. a. lin. 18. To speake merrie conceits.

Marco Aurelio.

Sublimar, abasir. pag. 11. lin. 18. To lift vp and to abase.
 A ley de bueno os juro. pag. 27. lin. 28. By the faith of a god man I swaere.
 Convien a saber. pag. 42. lin. 16. That is to wit.
 Sobrepuzir. pag. 46. lin. 11. To ouerpose.
 Pendón de taverna. pag. 51. lin. 9. The signe of a tauerne.
 Jugar al axedrés. pag. 59. lin. 20. To play at Chess.
 Poner obligación. pag. 224. lin. 26. to bind, to make one beholding to him.
 Ponér el águila en los pechos. pag. 245. lin. 20. To put the Eagle on his brest. i. To weare the Emperours armes the Eagle.

Armáçancadilla. pag. 256. lin. 2. To trip.
Cavallo de axedrez. pag. 279. lin. 26. The Knight at Chess.

De Comédia de Plauto Milite glorioso in 16. printed
at Antwerp M. D. LV.

Flerá vna náo. fol. 8. b. lin. 19. To hire a ship and pay passage money.
Hazér a lo largo en la mar. fol. 8. b. lin. 23. To lanch into the maine at sea.
Dios te pague. fol. 12. a. lin. 11. God reward thee.
Ponér o. Hazer lumbre. fol. 17. a. lin. 23. To make a fire.
El puerco muerto sabe mas quando se come. fol. 22. a. lin. 25. A dead hog tasteth best when he is eaten.
Hermáno del leche. fol. 25. b. lin. 17. A foster brother.
Poco me doy por cielo. fol. 28. b. lin. 19. Little care I for this.
Ordin tramas. fol. 29. b. lin. 8. verbatim. To spin webs. i. To woxke deceites.

Comédia de Plauto Menechmos, in 16. bound with
Milite glorioso.

Para que se ténga en mas. fol. 54. b. lin. 16. That he or it may be more esteemed.
Ambos a dos mancebos. fol. 55. b. lin. 15. Both the young men.
No perdás palabra. fol. 56. b. lin. 10. verbatim. Do not lose a word. i. Be attentive to that one shall say.
Hazér de nuéas con alguno. fol. 67. a. lin. 19. To make himselfe strange with one, when he knoweth him well enough.

Araucana in 16. three in one volumne. Printed in
Antwerp. 1597.

Cúchilla de la montaña. Elólogo. pag. 3. lin. 8. The edge or ridge of a hill.
Rociada dar. Elólogo. pag. 3. lin. 12. To give a volley of shot.
Como consta por sus óbras. Elólogo. pag. 7. lin. 5. As appeareth by his woxkes.
Medu la pica al enemigo. fol. 3. b. lin. 33. To come to pass a pike with the enemie.
Poblados penachos. fol. 4. a. lin. 32. Thicke plumes of feathers.
Hazérse a lo largo. fol. 3. a. lin. 10. verbatim. To make himselfe aloft. i. To step out as men in a quarrel to draw their weapon.
A rienda suelta. fol. 31. b. lin. penult. verbatim. With a loose raine of a bridle. i. at libertie, freelic, as
Rey a rienda suelta. To laugh freely, at libertie.

I would goe forward in this course of seeking hard places and phrazes in Authors, but for that I haue now much other busnes that never concernes me, onely certaine Prouerbes which I haue heretofore for mine owne use gathered, and here leaue some of them to your use, as yee shall best like them.

Refranes. Prouerbes.

First setting downe the English worde for worde according to the Spanish,
with this worde Verbatim. Afterwarde if it haue a sence differ-
fing from the worde, the meaning thus, i. for
id est: that is to saie.

No pude ser mas neguo el cuervo que sus alas. verbatim. The crowe can not be blacker then his wings. i. Nothing can exceede the highest degree.
Quien a lu enemigo popa, a sus manos muere. verbatim. Whosoever disdainfully dallies with his enemie, die by his owne hande. i. by making no reckoning of his enemie, receaues damage.
Quien come y dexa, dos veres pone la mesa. verbatim. Who dureth and leaueth sez another time, couers the table twise. i. He that keepeth in store, leaueth his turne when he hath neede.
Gran fabor es comér y no escotar. verbatim. It is great saueringes to dine or eare, and not to paye any shott or reckoning. i. God drinking of wine of another mans purse.

La codicia rómpre el saco. verbatim. Covetousnes burlath the bagge. i. never thinketh it full till it byake.
Mas vén quatro ójos que no dos. verbatim. Four eyes see better then two. i. Two headees are better then one.
Mas vale páxaro en mano que bueytre belando. verbatim. Better a birde in hand then a vultur flying. i. A birde in hand worth ten in the bush.
Entre hermanos, no metas tus manos: Porque, quien los desparte, lleva la peor parte. verbatim. Betweene brother put not thou thy hand; for who se fers them hath the worst of it.
Ni de estóp buen camí, ni de puta buena amiga. verbatim. Neither of huredes is made a good shitt, nor of a quacane a good louer.
Quien ha oficio ha beneficio. verbatim. He that hath an occupation or office hath a benefite and a benefit.
En la boca cerrada no entra mosca. verbatim. In a closed vp mouth a sic cannot get in.
Mas cerca elian mis dientes que mis parientes. verbatim. My teeth are nearer to me then my kinred.
i. Never is my teate, but nearer is my shitt.
Mas vale ser cabeca de Ratón, que cola de Leon. verbatim. Better to be the head of a Mouse then the taile of a Lyon. i. Better be shife in a meane place, then underling in a greater.
Da Dios hávas, a quien no tiene quixádas. verbatim. God giveth bernes to them that haue no lawes to eate them. i. God sends foiles fortune.
A cavallo comedor cabestro corto. verbatim. To a greedie eating horse, a short halter. i. To a prodigall man meane fortune: a curst cowe short hognes.
Dime con quien andas, y dezirte he quien éres. verbatim. Tell me with whom thou goest, and I will tell the what thou art. i. Birdes of a feather will flocke together; like will to like.
En la boca del dícreto, Lo público es secreto. verbatim. In the woxmens mouth, That is manifest is kept secret.
Piedra moveida, no cria moho. verbatim. The rolling stone engenders no mosse.
Mas vale saber, que avér. verbatim. It is better to haue knowledge then riches.
Quien mal en horna, saca los panes tueros. verbatim. He that seteth in the bread in the ouen naughtily, draweth out the louanges crushed awrie: as one bryewes so let him drinke: as one plots so it picces.
Quien da presto, da dos vézes. verbatim. He that giues quickly, giueth twise.
Miédo guarda viña y no viñadéro. verbatim. Feare keepeth and loketh to the vineyard and not the owner. i. Feare makes one luke about.
A muertos y a ydos no ay amigos. verbatim. To dead men and absent there are no friendes left. i. Out of sight out of minde.
La cõz de la yegua no haze mal al pôtro. verbatim. The kiche of the mare hurteth not the colt. i. A friends reprofe never doth ill.
A vn traydor dos aleivos. verbatim. To one traitor, two traitors. i. To ouer reach one craftie knaue, set two craftie knaues to him and they will cony catch him. The Italian saith, A vn fino, vn fino & mezo.
Jurado ha el vño de negro, no hazer blanco. verbatim. The bath of the blackmore hath swozne not to whiten. i. That whiche is bled in the bone will never out of the flesh.
En casa del melquino, manda mas la mugr que el marido. verbatim. In the house of the simple soule, the wife commandes more then the husband. i.
In the house of the silly man of necessarie and of force:
The gracie mare will still proue the better horse.
Es mas el ruydo, que las nueces. verbatim. The noise is greater then the nuts. i. More afraid then hurt.
Dos pardales en vna espiña, hâzen mala liga. verbatim. Two sparrows on one eare of coine make an ill agreement. i. Two competitoris cannot accorde.
No es tan bravo el Leon como le pintan. verbatim. The Lion is not so fierce as they paint him. i.
He is such a one as he makes shewe of.
En hora buena nace, quien buena fama cobra. verbatim. He is borne in a god house that gets him selfe a god name. i. A god name is better then riches.
De baxo de mala capa, yaze buen bevedor. verbatim. Under a bad cloake lies a god drinker. i. The woxke outwardly arrayed, the better inwardly lined.
Derâbo de puerco, nunca buen virote. verbatim. Of a pigges taile you can never make a god shaft. i. Nay a foole in a knoker you cannot make him leau his colie: a crowne will never doe made a king.
Quies es hidalgo? El que hâze las obras. verbatim. What is this gentleman. i. Who is to be a gentleman? Quien ha que doth the woxkes of a gentleman.
El asno suffre la carga, no la sobre. caga. verbatim. The asse endureth his burden, but not more then his burden.
Amenzados pán comen. verbatim. Threatened men eate bread. i. The threatened men live long.

Si en la ladrón, que todos son de su condición. *verbatim.* The theſſe thinketh that all are of his condition, i. Currie one iudgeth another by himſelfe. Mas vale vn tóma que dos te dae. *verbatim.* One hold is better then two I will give theſe. Once gūning is better then often promiſing. No ſegána camóra en vn hora. *verbatim.* camóra (a ſtrong towne) is not wonne in an hower, i. ſtōne was not buiilt in a day. Quién te tiempo tiene, y tiempo atiende, tiempo viene, que ſe arrepiente. *verbatim.* He that hath time, and looks for better time, Time comes that he repente himſelfe of time. Buen coraçon quebránta mala ventura. *verbatim.* A god hart heaſeth ill hap, i. A god hart overcometh all. Mundo redondo quién no ſabe nadar va ſe en hondo. *verbatim.* Round world, he that cannot ſwim let him ſink to the bottome. Malas ſon las burlas verdaderas. *verbatim.* True iestes are ill, i. It is ill to iest at that which was done in deſt. Quién te hace ſc̄la, que no lo ſuél'e haver, o te quiere engañar, o te ha menester. *verbatim.* Who ſo maketh much of theſe that was not wont, either will deſtrue or ſtands in neede of theſe. Quién a ſolás come el gallo, a ſolás enſilla fu cavallo. *verbatim.* Whosoeuer eates the cocke alone, ſaddles the horſe alone, i. He that will keepe his meate and his money to himſelfe, muſt doe his buſineſſe himſelfe. Ház bien y no eates a quién, haz mal y guártate, *verbatim.* Doe god and regard not to whom, doe evill and take heede of thy ſelfe. Quién a buen árbol ſe arrima buena ſombra le cobija. *verbatim.* Whosoeuer leaneth to a god tree, getteth a god ſhadow, i. Whosoeuer hath a ſure man to truſt unto, hath a great pleaſure. Quién no paréce poréce. *verbatim.* Who appears not, periſheth, i. Out of ſight, out of minde. Biva conigo y búſa a quién te manténgas. *verbatim.* Lieu with me, and leke ſome other that may maintaine theſe, i. Doe me ſeruice, and get maintenance where thou caſt. Hónoray y provécho, no caben en vn ſaco. *verbatim.* Honour and profit are not contained together in one ſacke, i. If you be honorable, you muſt be liberal and not reſpect your money. Quién quita lo caſón, quita el pecado. *verbatim.* He that taketh awaie the occaſion, taketh away the offence, i. He that remoueth the allurement, taketh away the ſame. La pobriza no es vilēza mas inconveniencia. *verbatim.* Powertie is no vile or vitiouſe matter, but yet an inconuenient. Las quentas en la mano, y el diablo en el capillo. *verbatim.* The beades in the hand, and the diuell in his capuch or cape of his cloake, i. God in his mouth and the diuell in his hart: god words and wicked deeds. Palabras y pláumas el viento las lleva. *verbatim.* Worfes and feathers the wind carries away, i. Worfes are but wind. Ni Sávado ſin ſol ni moça ſin amor, ni véjo ſin dolor. *verbatim.* Neither Sabaoth without ſunne, nor yong wench without loue, nor an old body without grieſe or ache. Fuego de eſtópa, *verbatim.* Fire of flaxe, Amor de púta, *verbatim.* Loue of a queane, Viénto del culo, *verbatim.* Winde from the taile, Todo es vno, *verbatim.* All is one.

De yra de Señor y de alboroto depue- blo.	Of the wrath of a mightie man & the tumult of the people.
De lócos en lugár eſtrecho,	Of mad fooles in a narrow place.
De hónra menguáda, y gente que no tiene náda.	Of credit decaied, and people which haue nothing.
De móga adeuina, y muger lati- na.	Of a yong wench a prophetelle, and a iatin woman.
De persona ſeñalada, y de Biuda tres <i>Take heede</i> vézes caſida.	Of a person marked, & a widow thiſe married.
De lódos al caminár, y de luéngua en- fermedad.	Of ſowle durtie ſwages and long ſickenes.
De viénto que entre per horado, y de enimigo que ſe reconciliado.	Of wind that comes in at a hole, and of a reconciled enemy.
De madrasta, el nombre le bá- ſta.	Of a ſtepmother, the very name of her ſufficeth.

F f N f S.

PLEASANT and DELIGHTFVLL
DIALOGVES IN SPANISH
and English, profitable to the learner,
and not unpleaſant to any
other Reader.

By I O H N M I N S H E U Professor
of Languages in
London.

Virescit vulnere Virtus.



Imprinted at London, by
Edm. Bollifant.

1599

Al muy illustre Señor, Don Eduardo Hobby:
su aficionado servidor Juan Minsheu
deséa salúd, y perpetua felicidad.



Vy illustre Señor, de aquél famoso pintor Apeles se cuenta, que aviendo acabado de pintar una hermosa tabla, temiendo la colgada en parte pública, innumerable gente de todas suertes, combidada de la lindezza della, suspendieron sucurso, y se deturvisieron a contemplárla, entre los de mas, se aceró a llegar un rústico labrador, y como todos alabássen grandemente el ingénio del artifice, juntamente con la pintura: el villano con bozronca y mal compuesta, dixo, una gran falta tiene ésta tabla; lo qual como oyesse Apeles, le preguntó qual fuese ésta? El respondió, aquella espiga sobre la qual está aquél páxaro sentado, deviéra éstá más inclinada, porque conforme al peso que presupone el páxaro y la flaguera de la caña, no podíá sustentársela sin doblarse más, oyó ésto por el pintor, vió que retiarazón el villano; y tomando el pincel, emendó luego aquella falta, siguiendo su parecer; sobrío pues el rústico con ver que se uviésser tomado su voto, pasó mas adelante, y dixo, aquelloz capatos que aquella figura tiene no están buenos, a ésto le respondió Apeles, Hermano cura de tu arte, y dexa a cada uno el suyo. Esta figura, muy illustre señor, he querido traer, por decir, que si todos los hombres se conformássen con lo que jáuen y que su ingenio alcanza, no quisíássen paffár adelante, asabélo que no es de su profesión my les toca, my ellos quedáran corridos, como éste villano, mi labrador se entremetería a tratar de la guerra, my el mercader de la cavallaría, my el oficial de las ciencias, my el herriero se pondría a disputar puntos de teología; Sino que tratando cada uno aquello a que su capacidad se estienca, y no mas, fería un concierto maravilloso, que resultaría en grande utilidad de toda la república, y para ésto devriámos tomar exemplo en las cosas naturales, las quales perpetuamente guardan su orden y concierto, sin entremeterse las unas a hazer el oficio de las otras, y ansi vemos que my la tierra calienta, my el fuego produce, my el viento riega, my el agua vembéa, sino que cada cosa tiene su calidad, y oficio particular. Pues aviendose de guardar éste concierto y orden, a v.m. conviene y toca el juzgir de ésta mi obra, como aquél que entre todos los demás, tiene el primado de la lengua Española, segun la facilidad con que se le da, y la perfección con que la habla, però tambien en otras muchas sciéncias, y facultades, en que v.m. resplandeció sobre todos los de nuestro tiempo. Aquí no es de olvidar la resplandiente, rara y acabada perfección en hermosura, doctrina, lenguas, de la muy illustre Señora Doña Margarita su mujer de v.m. Dios sabe, si yo quisiera dedicar la toda la obra entera, y no partida en parte, (pues quando no uiverá las razones dichas para hazerlo; biéstará el agradecimiento y benevoléncia; que v.m. mostró al que primero emprendió lo que he yo ampliado, y hecho mas copioso: Pero el lo dexado de hazer, por dos razones a my juzgio; la una es la obligación precisa que tengo a las personas a quien uadegida, no solo de obediencia y amistad, sino tambien de ayuda, favor, y socorro, que me han dado, para poder llegarla a su fin; y la otra razón es, a verse comenzado, profeso-

guido,

The Epistle Dedicatore.

quido, y acabado en su nombre, y para que se apoye chan della, en su ministerio. Pero ya que lo que es mayor en cantidad tengo empleado, lo que es igual en calidad, o fresco y delicado a v. m. y ésto mas por lo que a mi importa, pues quedare seguro que los detráctores no osén morder en lo que ha sido censurado por tan primo júyzo y entendimiento, que no por la gloria o utilidad que dello se podrá seguir a v. m. ultra de que con esto satisfaga en parte la deuda de agradecimiento, que dérvo a quien contanza voluntad favorece a mi profesión, oficio verdaderamente proprio de hombres sabios y discrétores, ansí como es de ignorantes y poco menos que bestias, el impedir semejantes exercitos lo qual no cabe sino en hombres gruesos de entendimiento, y de conciencias. Suplico a v. m. se sirva de recibir esto pequeño servicio, aunque con grande voluntad ofrecido, y ponerlo debaxo de su protección y amparo, pues con esto, la obra quedará segura, y yo tambien lo estare, de que está bien empleada: y tomaré a las para emprender mayores cosas en nombre de v. m. Cuya muy ilustre persona, nuestro señor, oír guard de con acrecentamiento de mayores estados.

Bésa las manos de v. m. su servidör,

JOHN MINSHEU.

Diálogo primero para levantarse por la mañana y las cosas a ello pertenecientes, entre un hidalgó llamado don Pedro y su criado Alonso, y un su amigo llamado don Juan, y una áma.

D.P. O Yes moço?

A. Señor.

d.P. Que ora es?

A. Las cinco son dadas.

d.P. Levántate y abre aquella ventána a ver si es de dia.

A. Aun no es bien ameneñido.

d.P. Pues afno, como dixiste que ha dado las cinco?

A. Señor las cinco yo las conté, pero el relóx y la mañana no andan a una.

d.P. O tu miéntes o el relóx miénte, que el sol no puede mentir.

A. Mas vale que miénto yo, que no el año.

d.P. Que dia haze?

A. Señor nublado.

d.P. En los ojos déves tu de tener las nubes que el cielo yo le veo claro.

A. Pues no estoy ciégo.

d.P. Antes creo que estas durmiendo toda vía.

A. Sé, que no soy elefante que tengo de dormirme en pie.

d.P. Haze frío?

A. Vn cereganillo entra por la ventána que corta las narizés.

d.P. Dáme de vestir que me quíero levantár.

A. A que, tan de mañana?

d.P. A negociar, que tengo mucho que hazer oy.

A. Aun no estará nadie en pie.

d.P. Tu adevínas a tu provécho.

A. Que vestido se quiere poner vuestra merced?

d.P. El de velárte, que dízen que es hónra y provécho.

A. Que jubón?

d.P. El de raso pespuntado.

A. He le aquí.

d.P. Majadéro, pues el jubón me tráes,

P. Y Outh, doest thou heare?

A. Sir.

P. What is it of the clocke?

A. It hath strooken five.

P. Rise, and open that window, to see if it be day.

A. It is not yet breake of the day.

P. Why then assebead, why saidst thou that it had strooke five a clocke.

A. Sir, I told you five, but the clocke and the morning goe not together.

P. Either thou liest, or the clocke lieth, for the sunne cannot lie.

A. It is better that I lie, then the yeere proue out ill.

P. What weather is it?

A. Sir cloude weather.

P. Belike shie eyes be cloudie, for I see the skie cleere.

A. Yet am I not blinde.

P. Rather I beleeme thou standest sleeping.

A. I knowe, I am not elephant to sleepe standing.

P. Is it cold weather?

A. Here comes in such a colde northerly winde at the windowe, that it bites off my nose.

P. Giue me my clothes, for I will rise.

A. What doe so early?

P. To goe about busines, for I haue much to doe to day.

A. No bodie will be yet stirring.

P. Thou doest prophesie for thine owne boofe.

A. What apparell will you weare to day Sir?

P. That of the fine blacke cloth, for it is of estimation and profitable.

A. What doublet?

P. That of stitched fatten.

A. Here it is.

P. Blocke head, doest thou bring me my doubles

¹ The first Dialogue of rising in the morning, and of those things thereunto appertaining: betweene a Gentleman named M. Peter, and his seruant Alonso, & another friend of his called M. John, and a nurse of the house.

Diálogos.

es, ántes que la camisa, quíeres
me motejar de açoñado.

* *Thise that be
whipped, put on
their doublets
in hast before
their shirts, to
faue them from A.
A. Aun no ha traydo las camisas la
labandera.
d.P. Pues, hide puta y'd por ellas.
A. * Al Ruyn de Roma, quando le
nómbran, luego aofina, aquí
viene ya la labandera.
d.P. Está enxuta?*

A. Como vn cuerno.
d.P. No os he dicho, que no me tray-
gás éstas comparaciones.

A. * Esto fuera, Si fuéra, y.m. persona
Sospechosa que no se a de men-
tar la foga, en casá del ahor-
cado.

d.P. Dáme las cálzas de terciopelo a-
cuchilladas.

A. Aquí están señor.
d.P. Están limpias? mira bien si tienen
algun punto suelto las medias.

A. Esta es vna de las tres cosas que
Ganasa dezía, que el hombre
busca con gran cuidado, y
quando las ha hallado le pesa.

d.P. Y quales son las de mas?

A. Vnasuziedad en la cama, y los cu-
érnos, si fuíngerse los pónen,
pero éstas fanas están.

d.P. Cálquinelas, dáme el sayo de ve-
lárte, quel de ráxa es muy del-
gado para éste frío que haze.

A. Quiére, v. m. ponése borzegui-
es?

d.P. No fino capatos y pantúflos, por
amor del óido: Dáme primero
aguamáños.

A. Señor el agua está elada en el jár-
ro.

d.P. Buena señál. A. De que señor? d.P.
de Carábanos.

A. Y aun de que hález frío.

d.P. Derrítelo en el brasero, dáme en-
tre tanto el espejo y vnas tixé-
ras que quícro adereçárme la
bárra.

A. Aquí está el estúche donde está
todo, y también el pýnc.

d.P. O que de canas téngo, ya me voy
parando

Dialogues.

doublet before my shirt, will thou
scoufe me as though I had beeue
* whipped?

A. The laundress hath not yet brought
home the shirts.

P. Whoorsonne knaue, go then for them.

A. Lapus est in fabula, as soone as one
names him presently he appeares,
here comes the laundress.

P. Is it drie?

A. As drie as a horne.

P. Haue I not told thee, that thou bring
me no such comparisons.

A. That is true, if you were a person suspec-
ted, for a man ought not to make
mention of a halter in the house of
a man that was hanged.

P. Giue me my paned velvet boſe.

A. Here they are sir.

P. Be they made cleane? Looke well if the
stockings haue any stiches bro-
ken in them.

A. This is one of the three things which
Ganasa saida a man seekes dili-
gently after, and when he bath
found them it grieses him.

P. And what are the other two?

A. Fisht in the bed one ierth in, and hornes
if they be of his owne wifes grafting,
but these stockings are whole.

P. Pull them on, giue me that ierkin of
blacke cloth, for that of thin cloth
rash is very thin for this cold wea-
ther.

A. Will you weare buskins?

P. No, but pumpes and pantofles because of
the durt: Giue me first water to
wash my hands.

A. Sir, the water is frozen in the pot.

P. A good signe. A. Of what sir? P. Of
ice.

A. And also that it is cold.

P. Thaw it in the pan of coales, in the
meane while giue me the looking
glasse and scissers, for I will trim
my beard.

A. Here is the case where all are in, and
likewise the con.be.

P. On what boare haires I haue, I begin to
make

Dialogos.

parando vejo.

A. Señor, las navidades nose van en
báldie.

d.P. Por cierto no téngo muchas, fino
as como dízen en mi tierra, cá-
nas y cuérnos no viénen por
días.

A. Ya está buena ésta agua, bien se
puede vucistra merced lavár.

d.P. Pues dacá la fuente, y la toalla.

A. Quiére, v.m. Llevar capay górra o
herreroulo y sombrero?

d.P. No es áora tiémpo dé górra, dame
el ferreroulo largo, y vn som-
brero de fiéltro.

A. Que espláda! Dorada, plateada o
Pavonada?

d.P. No la querío, fino enbarnizada por
filloviére, Mira quien llama a sa
puerita.

A. El señor don Iuan es.

d.P. Corre abre prísto.

d.I. Muy buenos días dé Dios, a v.m.

Señor don Pedro.

d.P. Osenor don Juan, v.m. sea tan bien
*venido como los buenos años:

como está v.m?

d.I. Muy al servício de v. m. v.m. está
bueno?

d.P. Al servício de v. m. como estuvie-
re, aunque algo achacólo.

d.I. Pues porque madruga tanto fino
ánda bueno?

d.P. Porque dízen los médicos que pa-
ra la salud, es bueno levantá de
mañana.

d.I. Esta falud ténganse la éllos, que pa-
ra mi éstos son los días que de-
vémos metér en casa como dí-
ze el Refrán, o que los tengá-
mos en la cama, dixerá mejor.

d.P. Para dezir la verdad, yo mas lo hág-
o, por entendér en mis negó-
cios.

d.I. Como le va a v.m. dellos?

d.P. Señor al servício de v. m. mal ben-
dito sea Dios.

d.I. Como ansi no despáchan a v.m?

d.P. Si Señor despéchanme. Mucácho
tráe nos de almorcáz antes
que salgámos.

d.I. Ya

Dialogues.

waxe olde.

A. Sir, yeeres passe not ouer ones head in
vaine.

P. Truly, I haue not many yeeres on my
backe, but as they say in my coun-
trie, Hourre baires, & hornes come
not by age.

A. This water is now well, you may now wel
wash Sir.

P. Then giue heere the basen and yender,
and the towell.

A. Will you weare a short cloake and cap,
or long cloake and hat?

P. It is no weather now for a cap, giue me
a long cloake and a felshat.

A. What rapier, gilt, silvered, or sangui-
ned?

P. None, but that varnish rapier, leſt it
should raine: Go looke who knockes
at the doore.

A. It is master Iohn.

P. Run, open the doore quickly.

I. God giue you good morrow master Pe-
ter.

P. Oh master Iohn, you are as well wel-
come as good fortune: how doyou
Sir?

I. Readie to do you service, and are you
well Sir?

P. How soever Sir, at your command al-
though now I am not halfe well.

I. Why then do you rise so earely, if you be
not well?

P. Because Pensions saie, that for ones
health is good to rise earely in
the morning.

I. That health let them haue themselues
for me, these be the good dates (as
the Proverbe saith) which we
ought to locke up within our dores,
nay (I should say) within our beds.

P. To tell you the truth, I do it chiefly to
follow my busines.

I. How goeth it with you in your busines?

P. Sir at your command, but ill inough God
be thanked.

I. How do they not dispatch you?

P. Tea Sir, they despéchanme. Boie, giue us
sómen bus to breakefast before we
go foorth.

I. I

4 Dialogos.

d.I. Ya yo he bevido vna vez. I. *I haue alreadie eaten a bit.*
 d.P. Beverá. v. m. ótra que no le hará mal. P. *One bit more will doe you no harme.*

d.I. No, que no soy tan delicado como judío en viernes. I. *No, for I am not so curiosus as the Jewe on a fridays.*
 A. Que queren vs. ms. almorzar. A. *What will your worshipes breake your fast withall?*

d.P. Tráe vnos pastcles y vn quartillo de cabrito asado. P. *Bring a pie, and a quarter of a rosted kidde.*

d.I. Que bien adereçado tiene. v. m. I. *Oh how well in order haue you this lodgging M. Peter?*
 d.P. Señor Razonáble como para vn hidalgó pobre. P. *Sir reasonable for a poore gentleman.*

d.I. De donde tuvo. v.m. ésta tapicería? I. *From whence had you this tapestrie hangings?*
 d.P. Señor, de Flandes vino. P. *Sir it came from Flaunders.*

d.I. También devén deser de alla los lienzos o pinturas o Retratos? I. *And from thence also came these pictures and portraiture?*

d.P. Algunos dellos, otros son de Ytalia. P. *Some of them did, others came from Italie.*

d.I. De gentil mano son por cierto: quanto le costó. a v. m. éste escritorio? I. *Truely they are of a fine workmans doing. What cost this desk or caske?*

d.P. Mas que vale, quarenta ducados. P. *More then it is worth, fortie ducates.*

d.I. De que madera es? I. *Of what wood is it?*

d.P. La colorada es caoba de la Havána y ésta negra es évano, la blanca es marfil. P. *The red is "Caóba of Havána, and this blacke is Ebonie, and the white is Ivorie.*

d.I. Ciento que está muy curioso, y muy bien alentada la taraçá. I. *Truely it is very curiosus, and the inlaying of the wood most finely set in.*

d.P. Aquí verá. v. m. vn buetcé mejor labrado. P. *Here may you see a standing table, better wrought.*

d.I. Adonde fue hécho? I. *Where was it made?*

d.P. El y las sillas vinieron de Salamanca. P. *That and the chaires came from Salamanca.*

d.I. Lo mejor le falta a v. m. en este aposento. I. *The best thing is yet wanting in this lodgging.*

d.P. Que es, por vida del Señor don Juan? P. *What is it I pracie you hartie master Juan?*

d.I. Por lo que dezía don juan manuel, un fonezito de chapín. I. *That which don Juan Manuel saide, the gentle sound of awomans shoe.*

d.P. Ya entiendo, por la muger lo dice v. m. P. *Now I understande you meane a wife?*

d.I. Por la misma. I. *Even the selfe same.*

d.P. Aníme parece que lo mejor que tiene es estar sin ella. P. *It seemes unto me, that the best thing my lodging hath is to be without her.*

d.I. No Señor no diga. v. m. esto que es triste cosa la soledad. I. *Oh Sir, saie not so, solitarines is unpleasante.*

d.P. A tengo me al que dice, que vale mas solo que mal acompañado. P. *Ab Sir, I stande to that old saying, better alone then euill accompanied.*

d.I. Pues

I. But

Dialogues.

Dialogos.

d.I. Pues no se entiende que a de ser mala. I. *But you must not understande of a bad wife.*
 d.P. Y adónde le hallarémos que sea buena? P. *And where shall we finde her that is good?*

d.I. Muchas ay muy buenas. I. *There are many very good.*
 d.P. Es verdad, las que están enterradas. P. *It is true, they which are dead and buried.*

d.I. De fuerte que quiere. v. m. decir que la mujer estóndes es buena quando está muerta. I. *So that you will say, that a woman is then good, when she is dead.*

d.P. Digo señor que cada loco con su tema, yo he dado a ora en ésta. P. *I say Sir, that every foole hath his wilfullnesse, and I haue lighted now upon this.*

d.I. No, y se faldrá. v. m. con ella, como el Rey con sus alcaválas. I. *And you shall as easily carrie it away as the * king doth his subsidies. *Without controulment.*

d.P. No, se dice que una buena mula, y vna buena cabra, y vna buena muger son tres, malas cicas. P. *It is said, that a good mule, a good goat, and a good woman are three unhappy creatures.*

Al. La mesa está puesta bien se pueden sentar. vs. ms. almorzar. A. *The table is couered, your worshipes may well sit downe to breakefast.*

d.P. Señor don Juan come. vs. ms. aquella cabecera. P. *M. John, sit you downe at the upper end of the table.*

d.I. Bueno sería, esto es per motejarine de viejo. I. *It should doe well in deede, that is a floute because I am olde.*

d.P. No, si no por cumplir con la razón d.I. V. m. tome sulugir que yo tomaré el mio. I. *Take you your place and I will take mine.*

d.P. Bueno es que venga a mi casa, quien mande en ella mas que yo. P. *It is very good, that I should haue such a guest as shoulde command more in my house then my selfe.*

d.I. O si por ay lo echo. v. m. yo obedezco en su casa y fuerá. I. *Ob Sir if you take it so, I not onely obey you in your house, but abroad also.*

d.P. Yo soy el que tengo de servir como la razon me obliga. Muchacho dacadá platos. P. *Sir I am to be at your seruice, as reason bindeth mee. Boie giue mee dices heere.*

Al. Aquí estan Señor. A. *Heere they are Sir.*

d.P. De adonde truxiste estos pastcles? P. *From whence didst thou fetch these pies?*

Al. De la mas limpia pastelera que ay en la ciudad. A. *From the cleanliest piewife, that is in the citie.*

d.P. Son de nuestra vezina la hermosa? P. *What from our faire neigbour?*

Al. Si Señor. A. *Yea Sir.*

d.P. Bien los puede. v. m. comér sin asco que no mujer limpia son. P. *Well may you eat Sir of them without loathing, for they are from a cleynly woman.*

d.I. Mas que nunca lo fueran, nunca yo miro en misfieras. I. *And if they were not, I neuer sticke for small masters.*

d.P. Pues menos mirará, si fuera tan amigo de ellos como yo. P. *Leffe woulde you stande upon it, if you did loue them as I doe.*

d.I. Muy bien me saben, y lo mejor que yo les hallo es ser comida tan I. *They please my taste well, and the best is that I alwaies finde them to bee a mease*

tan acoerida, que a qualquier, ora, que el hombre la quiera la halla guisada.
d.P. Muchacho da nos de bever que pica la pimienta.

^{* Tinto is a wine in Staine red & black/b.} Al. Que quiere, v. m. blanco o tinto?

d.P. Echa de lo blanco, que es mas caliente para por la mañana.

d.I. Y aun es mas saludable que lo tinto.

d.P. Brindo a v. m. Señor don Itán.

d.I. Befo, a, v. m. las manos, haré la razon.

Al. Por qual taça quiere, v. m. bever, por la Llana o por esta hon- dilla.

d.I. Alonso amigo, avcis de faber que yo soy muy buen borracho y se muy bien lo que me bevo, por esli echaldine por aquella taça llana.

d.P. Yo gusto mas de bever por esta co- pa de vidrio que no por ningu- na de las taças.

d.I. ~~*~~ Señor, contra gustos no ay dis- púta.

d.P. Ansi es verdád, con esta pierna de cabrío beverá, v. m. otra vez, y trae vnas aceitunas para la tercera.

d.I. Esta ya se llamará comida y no al- muerzo.

d.P. Porque?

d.I. Porque dizen a buen comíro mal comér, tres vézes se a de bever.

d.P. Ay dice nuestra madre celestina ~~*~~ que está corrupta la letra que por decir tréze dixo tres.

d.I. Aora señor bien está lo hecho, no mas que perderemos la gana de el comér.

d.P. den nos bever otras sendas de la calabriada.

d.I. Adonde yrémos?

d.P. Lo primero a la yglésia, y enco- mendámos nos a Dios.

d.I. ~~*~~ Está muy bien, que por yra la yglésia ni dar cevada, no te pierde jornada.

d.P. cierra

* Calabriada: a mixed wine, half one wine and half another.

meate so in readines, that at whos soever hower a man will haue it he may finde it ready drest.

P. Boy give vs drinke, for the pepper bites.

A. Which will you haue sir, facke or * tinto?

P. Fill out of the facke, for it is more heat- ing, chiefly for the morning.

I. And also is more wholesome then the red.

P. I drinke to you master Iohn.

I. I thank you sir, I will pledge you.

A. In which cup will your worship drinke, in the plaine bootle, or in the little deepe one.

I. Friend Alonso you must knowe, that I am a very good drinker, and know how much I use to drinke, wherefore fill me that plaine bootle.

P. I like better to drinke out of this drink- ing glasse then out of any other of the cups.

I. Sir, against ones liking there is no dis- pusing.

P. It is so Sir: this leg of kid will make you once againe haue a quarrell to the cup. Bring vs some olives for the third course.

I. This is to be called a dinner and not a breakfaſt.

P. Why?

I. Because to a good meale or a bad, three draughts only are to be had.

P. Alas saith our mother Celestine, the letter is corrupted, for whereas he should haue said thirteene, he set downe three.

I. Well Sir, it sufficeth, we haue eaten well, no more, for we shall loose our stomacks to eate at dinner.

P. Let them give to each of us once againe of the * Calabriada.

I. Whither shall we goe?

P. First to the Church, to commend our selues to God.

I. It is very good, for neither in going to the Church, nor in givning pronen- der to thy horse, was there ever journey hindered or lost.

P. Shut

d.P. cierra aquel cofre, pon en cobro esas baratijas, llama al ámo que barra y componga este apoſento.

Al. Tengo de yr acompañando a v.m.

d.P. No, fino quedate en casa, ayúda al ámo y limpia todos mis vestidos y ponella en orden y a las onze llevaue el cavallo a pa- lacio.

Al. Está muy bien Señor, yo lo haré así.

d.P. ~~*~~ éste mi criado Señor don juan, es como malilla que hago de ello que quiero.

d.I. Y aun anda, v. m. en lo cierto para ser bien servido, que quando hombre tiene muchos criados, unos por otros nunca házen cófa a derchazas.

d.P. El me sirve de mayordomo, de re- poſtiro, de maestre sala, de guarda ropa, de paje, y de la- cayo, y a veces de despensero.

d.I. El parce buen hijo.

d.P. Bueno señor es tan bueno que a ser mas, no valiera nada, sola vna falta tiene.

d.I. Qual es?

d.P. ~~*~~ Que es grandissimo enemigo de el agua.

d.I. Eſſo hará lo, por el bien que le sabe el vino, pero esta no se puede llamar falta, ſi no ſobra.

d.P. Muchacho cierra la puerta, con la ~~*~~ llave, que a puerta cerrada el Diablo ſe buelue.

Al. Ama, tráyga vna caldero de agua y vna eſcoba, regáremos y barra- remos este apoſento.

Ama. Toma primero esta rópa blanca que tráxo la labandera.

Al. Aguarde, ſacaré la memoria para ver si falta algo.

Am. Adonde la tienes?

Al. Aquí está en mi faltriquera.

Am. Lee la pues.

Al. Memoria de la ropa de mi ámo que llevó la lavandera en diez de marzo de 1599, priuera- mente quattro camisas con ſus cuellos

P. Shut that cheſt, put up ſafe this house- hold ſtuffe, call the nurse that ſhee ſweepe and drefſe this lodging.

A. Shall I wait on your ſir?

P. No, but tarie in the house, helpe the nurse and brush all my apparel and ſet the house in order, and at ele- men of the clocke bring my horſe to the court.

A. Verie well ſir, I will doe it.

P. This my ſervant master Iohn is as the * Matilla, for I make of him what ^{agreed w'm} I will.

I. And thereby you are ſure to be well that he that hath ſerved, for when a man hath many him may make ſervants, one by reason of the other ^{of him, iugne,} neuer doth they ought. ^{acc, mine, ten,} ^{other carde.}

P. He ſerueth me for ſteward of my house, or what ſoever for a keeper of my plate, for a gen- man- uſer, vādrop keeper, page, and for laquey, and ſometimes for cater.

I. He ſeemeſ to be an honest fellow, a good fellow or good ſervant.

P. Good ſir, ſo good he is, that if he were better, he were worth nothing, on- ly one fault he hath.

I. What is that?

P. That he lones no water by no meanes.

I. That is for the good he findes in wine, but this cannot be called a want in him, but a ſuperfluite.

P. Boy, locke the doore with the key, for at a locked doore, the diuell himſelfe goeth his way.

A. Nurſe, bring a kettle of water and a broome, we will caſt water on, and ſweepe this chamber.

N. Take first this cleane linnen which the laundrefſe brought home.

A. Stay a little, I will take out the note to ſee if any thing be wanting.

N. Where is it?

A. Heere it is in my pocket.

N. Reade it then.

A. A note of my maſters clothes which the laundrefſe bad the tenth of March, 1599. First ſover ſhirts, with their ruffe bands to

uellos de lechuguilla.

Am. Aquí están A. dos sábanas, dos almohadas de cama, dos pares de calcetines de lienzo, tres de calcetas.

A. Aquí están.

Al. Una docena de pares de escarpines.

Am. No ay aquí mas que echo.

Al. Pues cuatro faltan a la labandera pedírlle he que de cuenta de los, y si ella los perdio que los págue.

Am. Anda, que velen cuatro escarpines viejos y rotos?

Al. Yten mas dos escopetas y quattro tocadores, media docena de pañuelos de nariz.

Am. Aquí está todo.

Al. Dos mesas de mantéles, y diez servilletas.

Am. Aquí citán.

Al. Tres toallas, y un frutero, y dos cuellos de encajé con sus puños.

Am. Todo está aquí que nada falta.

Al. Pues doblémoslo, y pongámoslo en el árca.

Am. Como me llamanys para que os ayude a esto, no me llamarades para que os ayudára al almuñero.

Al. Alli tengo guardados vnos escamochos que sobraran a mi árno.

Am. Quiero primero barrer ésta sala y adereçárla.

Al. Entre tanto limpiaré yo la ropa, sive de la escobilla?

Am. Vesta alli colgada de aquel clívo, que si fuerá pérro ya te uivira mordido.

Al. O quanto polvo tiene esta capa?

Am. Sacude la priñero con yna várá.

Al. Ama, mas que bien hechos están estos calcetones?

Am. Tanbien entiendo yo de éso, como puerca de freno.

Al. Pues que entiende?

Am. Al lo que a mi me importa si tu pregun-

to them.

N. Heere they are. Al. a paire of sheetes, two pillows, two paire of linen breeches next the skin, three paire of linen hose under the stockings:

N. Heere they are.

A. A dozen paire of socks.

N. There are but eight heere.

A. Then fower want, I will require of the laundress that she giue account of them, and if she hath lost them that she paie for them.

N. Go, what are fower old broken socks worth?

A. Also more, two night coifes and fower night kerchiefs, halfe a dozen of handkerchiefs.

N. Here is all.

A. Two table clothes and ten table napkins.

N. Here they are.

A. Three towels, and one * fruite cloth and two ruffe bandes wrought with their ruffes at hand.

N. All is here, nothing is wanting.

A. Then let us fold it, and let us put it in the chest.

N. Wherefore call you me, that I shold helpe you to do this, & would not call me that I shold helpe you to eate your breakfast?

A. There haue I used certaine fragments which my A. after left.

N. I will first sweep this hall and dresse it.

A. In the meane while will I brush the clothes: do you knowe where the brush is?

N. See there hanged upon that naile, that if it were a beare it would now haue bit thee.

A. Oh what a deale of dust bath this cloke?

N. Beate it out first with a wand.

A. Nurse, how exceeding well are these breeches made.

N. I haue as good knowledge therein as a sowe in a bridle.

A. What haue you kyowledge in ther?

N. In that which belongeth unto me, if thou

preguntaras por una basquiña, una saya entera, una ropa, un manto, o un cuerpo, una goruguera, de una toca, y cosas semejantes, supiéra te yo respondér.

Al. De manera que no sabe leer, mas de por el libro de su aldea.

Am. Quieres tu, que sea yo, como el ymbidio, que su cuidado es en lo que no le va ni le viene.

Al. Siempre es virtud savér, aunque sean cosas que parece que no nos ynpórtan.

Am. Bien leyo, que tu sabrás hazer una bellaqueria, y ésta no es virtud.

Al. Elsaverla hazer no es malo, el uñarla si.

Am. ✕ Siempre oy dezir que quien las sabe las tancé.

Al. ✕ No fino que quien ha las hechas ha las soñechas.

Am. Pues vellaco que he hecho yo?

Al. No mas de hazérme regañai algunas vezés.

Ama. No me destu ocasión.

Al. Estónces muchas merçédes, quando le doy ocasión, es menester que me perdóne, que quando no se la doy, poca amistad me haze.

Ama. A ora hermáno dextate de retóricasy has lo que tu ámo te mandó.

Al. Si haré aun que bien créo que no por éso me tengo de asentár con el ala mesa.

Ama. A lomenos escucharás de que el no te asiente en el rábo.

Al. Yo voy a enfillár el cavállo, a dios paredes hasta la buelta.

thou hadst asked of a peticoate, a womans cassocke, a womans gonne a mantell, a paire of bodies, a gorget, or a womans head attire, and like matters, I could haue answred thee.

A. So then the priest cannot say masse but in his ovne booke.

Am. Wilt thou, that I shold be as the enemys person which setteth his minde on that which belongs not unto him.

Al. Yet alwaies it is a vertue to know, although they be things which seem not to appertaine unto vs.

Am. I know well, that thou knowest well how to play the knave, and that I am sure is no vertue.

Al. To know how to doe it is not evill, but to vse it is evill.

N. I alwaies haue heard say, he that can play, plaieth b.

A. No but who so ever is bad, bath suspiacion of another to be bad.

N. Why knaue what haue I done?

A. Nothing else, but make me fret and vexe my selfe sometimes.

N. Doe not thow giue me occasion?

A. Then I thank you heartily, when I giue you occasion it is necessarie that you pardon me, that when I giue you no occasion, you doe mee little * carfesse.

N. Now brother, leaue your rhetorick, she doth not for and doe that thy M. commanded, give him any thing, seeing he maketh no of thee.

A. So will I doe, although I beleue, for all fence unto her, that I am not to sit at table with him.

N. Thou must needs beare with that, for that he doth not set it on your bum.

A. I goe to saddle the horse, farewell wals till my returne.

Diálogo segundo, en el qual, se tráta de comprar y vender joyas y otras cosas entre un Hidalgo llamado Thomas, y su mujer Margarita, y un Mercader y un Platero.

Th. A Donde queréis que vamos Señora?

Ma. Vámos a la platería, y compraremos algunas piezas de plata.

Th. Y de allí?

Ma. Irémos a la lonja para comprar algunas cosas.

Th. En el nombre de Dios, entrémos en esta tienda.

Ma. Plegue a el Señor con pie derecho.

Th. A Señor guarde Dios a v.m.

Pl. Y venga con vueltas mercedes.

Th. Mande nos mostrar, algunas buenas piezas.

Pl. Que generos quiere v.m. tágas, copas o jarros, fuentes, platos, y escudillas, es lo mas necesario.

Th. Y tambien copas de salvo, y saleros, vinageras.

Pl. Ola móço, saca aqui toda esa plata de el arca.

Ma. Veamos aquellos candelcros y despaviladeras.

Th. Si estos braferillos de mesa estuvieran Sincelados fueran mejoras.

Pl. Otros dicen, que la sinceladura es allegadero de mierda, hablando con perdón de vuestras mercedes.

Ma. No visto aquí agua maní ninguno.

Pl. Aqui está uno sobre dorado y sincelado con su fuente de la misma labor.

Th. Yo quisiera toda la baxilla de una misma labor que no diferenciaron vnas piezas de otras.

Pl. Por ello dicen, que tantas opiniones ay como cabezas: otros dicen que la variedad es la que agrada.

Th. Es verdád, pero la variedad ha de ser de colas enteras, y por que hazer vna capa de remiendos, no puede agradar a nadie.

Pl. Concierte

The second Dialogue, wherin is handled to buie and sell jewels and other things, betweene a gentleman called Thomas and his wife Margaret, and a Merchant, and a goldsmith.

Th. W^VHither will you that wee goe Ladie?

Ma. Let us go to the goldsmithes shops, and we will buie some pieces of plate.

Th. And from thence whither?

Ma. We will go to the Exchange to buy som things.

Th. In the name of God let us go into this shop.

Ma. Ipraise God it be in good time, luckely.

Th. Oh master goldsmith, God save you.

Go. And God be in your companie.

Th. Cause one to shew us some good peecees.

Go. What kinds will your worshipes see, plain cups, deep cups, or pots, evers, platters, or dishes, all these are the most necessarie.

Th. And also cups with couers, and salt-sellers, and bottles for vineger and oyle.

Go. Ho sirra, take out heere all this plate out of this chest.

Ma. Let us see these candlestickes and snuffers.

T. If those chafindishes for the table were engrauen they were better.

G. Others say, that the graving is a gathering of filth, speaking with reverence of your worshipes.

M. I see no basen here.

G. Here is one gilt over, and graued with his emer of the same worke.

T. I would haue all a cupboard of plate all of one worke, that there might not differ one peece from another.

G. Therefore they say, so many men of many mindes, others say varietie breedes delight.

T. It is true, but that varietie is to be of whole entire things by themselves, for to make a cloake with patches can please no bodie.

Go. Agree

Diálogos.

Pl. Concierte se v.m. conmigo en el precio, que yo se la daré acabada dentro de pocas dias de la hechura que la quisiere.

Ma. Siempre en las tardanças ay peligro, vale mas páxaro en mano que bueytre bolándo.

Th. Pues escoga de ay v.m. les piezas que mas le agradáren.

Ma. Este salpimentero y ésta copa con su sobre copa, y éste pichel, y ésta caldereta, y ésta porcelana sean las primeras.

Th. A como hémos de dár por * el marco de estas piezas?

Pl. Por el marco de las llanas me ha de dár. v. m. a cién reáles por las sinceladas, a quinze ducádos y por las doradas a treynta ducados.

Th. Si el pedís fuera dár, no se avía hecho mala hazienda oy, pero de $\frac{1}{2}$ el dieho a el hecho ay gran trecho.

Pl. Al de menos no lo daré yo por lo, que v.m. me ha ofrecido hasta agora.

Th. Está tan caro, que yo no sé que le ofrecá si no es vna báxá.

Pl. Esta yo la danzaré despues que v.m. aya tenido su alta.

Th. Mi mas alta Señor, es a seis ducados la llana, y a cién reáles, la sincelada, y la dorada, a veinte ducados.

Pl. Muy bien despachado yva yo, mas me tiénen ami de cósta.

Th. Pues Señor torné a danzar a v.en que pára.

Pl. En cada género, le quitaré a v.m. dos ducados y no mas.

Th. Muy mal danzó. v.m. no le toco mas.

Pl. Pues yo le asegúro a. v.m. que no lo halle mas varáto en la calle.

Th. Calle que si hallare, que donde vna puerta se cierra ciento se abren.

Ma. Si ha de valér mi voto, dezir le he.

Pl. Diga

Dialogues.

Go. Agree with me for the price, and I will make it vp for you within these few daies, of what fashion you will haue it.

M. Alwayes delaies breed danger, and better a birde in hand then a vulture flying.

T. Then choose you out those peecees which best shall like you.

M. This salt and pepper boxe, and this cup with his couer, and this pot made ever wife, and this kettle of silver, and this broad cup to drinke in are the best.

Th. What are we to paie for the halfe pound of these peecees?

Pl. For the halfe pound of these plaine pieces your worship is to give me $\frac{1}{2}$ beside the fashion.

Th. If asking were giving, you had not made an ill match to day, but there is a great distance betwixt the worde and the deede.

Go. At least I will not give it for that you haue offered me as yet.

Tb. You are so deere that I know not what I may offer for it, if there bee no * A daunce abatement.

Go. That will I daunce after your worship abatement. $\frac{1}{2}$ beside the treble.

Th. My highest is sixe ducates the plaine, and fiftie shillings the engrauen, and the gilt twentie ducates.

Go. This busnes is wel dispatchad now, they cost me more.

Th. But sir, come backe and daunce againe, to see upon what you sticke.

Go. In every kinde of them I will abate two ducates and no more.

Th. You daunce very ill, I plaie no more.

Go. But I assure your worship that you can not finde better cheape in the streete.

Th. Holde your peace, for I will finde: for where one dore shutes a hundred do open.

Ma. If my voice may preuale, ile strike the stroke.

Go. Let

Pl. Digale v.m. que le soy muy devoto. Go. Let your worship speake on, for I am much deuoted.

Ma. Pues otro tanto como baxó el plato, suba el señor Tomás y no se hable mas.

Pl. Porque su palabra de v.m. no buebla atrás, &c.

Th. No quería v.m. mas, ora peselo, pésar malo le dé dios a el diablo.

Pl. Lleven lo a casa que allá lo pesarémos.

Th. Móco carga con todo y Lleva lo a casa.

Pl. Han de bolvér se luego vuestras mercedes?

Th. No hasta de aquí a dos horas, que ymos a comprár otras colas.

Pl. Si v.m. es servido de que le acompañe, hazer lo he.

Ma. Guarde Dios a v.m. que no queremos mas compañía.

Th. En ninguna cosa gasto el dinero, de mejor gana que en pláta.

Ma. Lo que se gasta en pláta no es gastar, si no trocar piezas chicas por piezas grandes.

Th. Y tanbien por que cabe en ella lo que dizen que no cabe en un fago que es honra y provecho.

Ma. Si, por que si hombre le quiere servir con vidrio o china, o bárro, mas cuesta lo que le quiebra entre año que la hechura de la pláta.

Th. Y con vna baxilla que hombre compra vna vez, tiene para hijos, nietos, y viñfíctos.

Ma. Aora vamos a la joyería.

Th. Esse es vn camino que yo hago de muy mala gana.

Ma. Por que razón?

Th. Por que éstas joyas son como las donzellaz, que miéntras están engerradas son de mucho valór, y en sacando las fuera, le pierden todo y no valen nada.

Ma. Si peró, lo que se vía no se escúfa.

Th. Al

Ma. Then so much as the goldsmith hath abated, so much let master Thomas rise, and let there be no more wordes.

Go. For that your worship's worde may bee taken, &c.

Th. You can desire no more, now waigh it, God give ill waight to the diuell.

Go. Carrie it to your bousé, there we will waigh it.

Tb. Sirra, take up all this and carrie it home.

Go. Are your worship's to come backe againe this way by and by?

Tb. Not till within this two houres, for we goe to buy other things.

Go. If it please you, but I go with you, I will.

Ma. God keepe you, we will no more compaニー.

Tb. In nothing I spend money with a better will then in plate.

Ma. That which is laide out in plate is not waisted, but to change small peeces for great peeces.

Tb. And alfo there is contayned in it that they say is not contained in a facke, which is *honor and profit.

Ma. Yea, for if a man will serue his turne with glasse, or w^{ch} China metall, or earth, that which is broken thereof, cost more in a yere then the fashion of the plate.

Tb. And for a cupboard that a man buieth once, he is furnished for his chil-dren, nephewes, and nephewes chil-dren.

Ma. Now let us goe to the place where they selliewels.

Tb. This is away that I goe unwillingly.

Ma. What is the reason?

Tb. Because these iewels are as maidens, that while they are maidens and kept in, they are of much value, and in taking them abroad they loose all, and are worth nothing.

Ma. Yea, but that which is a custome cannot be bunned, custome needes no excuse.

Th. But

Th. Al mal vso quebrár le la pierna.

Ma. No querás señor ponér vos pueras a el campo ni coregir el mundo, que ansi le hallátes y ansi le havéis de dexár.

Th. Ora pues corra o río por do suele, pues se arendo la renta con éstas condiciones.

Ma. Entrémos en ésta tienda que es la mas rica.

Me. Que manda v.m. señor caualléro, que ha menester?

Th. Yo ninguna cosa, ésta señora, mu-chas.

Me. Pues pida su merced, que todo se le dará aquí a muy buen precio.

Ma. Muestre me acá algunos tocados, guirnaldillas, rapósos, randas, deshilados, tocas de todas suertes, y tan bien venga la olanda delgada, cambray, y otras suertes de liéncos.

Me. Entre v.m. que todo lo verá aquí.

Ma. Todo esto es obra tosca mas *prima la quiéro.

Th. Para prima Señora no es buena la hija de vuestro tío?

Ma. Es muy gorda aquella, y por ello quería otra mas delgada.

Me. Pues en ésta caxa verá. v.m. el pri-mor del mundo, todo es obra de Milán.

Th. Obra de Milán veeme y no me tangas.

Ma. Nada de esto me contenta.

Me. Espanto me como se caí v.m. siendo tan mal contentadiza.

Th. Fue por que vido a el nóbio de noche, y como dizen entoncés todos los gatos son párados.

Ma. Muestre me otra mejor obra si tie-ne, y dexese de preguntar quan-tos años tengo.

Me. Aora ésta es la última prueva, ve aquí v.m. obra de argentería ve allí de aljofar, éstotra de abaló-rio, y ésta de pérlas, escoja como peras en tabáque.

Ma. Por cierto en ruin hato, poco ay que escojér.

Mc. A

Th. But it is good to break the legs of an il custome.

Ma. I would not have you Sir* make doores * i. to do ictings for the fields, and correct the whole impossible.

Th. Why then let the riner run where it was wont, seeing the thing was bi-red with these condicione.

Ma. Let us go into this shop, for it is the richest.

Me. What doth your worship command, what haue you neede of?

Th. I of nothing, this gentlewoman of many things.

Me. Then let her require what, and all shall be given her very good cheape.

Ma. Shew me some womens head attire, garland head attire, wires of siluer, bone worke or bone lace, stitched worke, head attire of all sortis, and also bring fine holland, cambrecke, and other sortis of linnen.

Me. May it please your worship come in, for you shall see all heere.

Ma. All this is grosse worke, I would see *Prima i. chief, more principall.

Th. Will not your uncles daughter serue you sheesenger-principall or a man.

Ma. This is very course, and therfore would I haue other finer.

Me. Then in this cheſt shal your worship see the principaleſt that is, all is worke of Milan.

Th. Worke of Milan* see me but touch me not. Because they are toies, if you touch them they

Ma. None of these please me.

Me. I wonder how your worship married

being so diners to please your fancy.

Th. It was because he saw i he bridegroome by night, and as they saie, when all cats are greyed.

Ma. Shewe me some better worke, if you haue any, and leave of to ake how old I am.

Me. Now is the last triall, see heere worke of siluer, there of small pearle, this other of blacke bugles, and this of pearle, escoja one a pedres in a basket.

Ma. Verily in a bad flocke, this is but a smal choice.

Mc. Call

Me. A esto llama v. m. ruín, reo que es de peor condición que el filósofo Demócrito, que no hallo cosa en el mundo que no tuviese falta.

Th. Eso sin Democrito lo digo yo, que no ay cosa perfecta en el mundo.

Me. Eso verificarse ha, en cosas naturales, que en las de el arte puede ayer perfección cada vna en su género.

Th. Pues que pensais vos que es el arte, fino y unitadór de la natura, y si en la natura no ay perfección menos la avrá en el arte suunitadór.

Me. Yo señor no soy filósofo, ni quiero contender con v. m. mis mercaderías querria que tubiesen la perfección en el precio.

Ma. Sino le tienen en su valor, no le pueden tener en el precio.

Me. Aora señora vás v. m. lo que mas le contáta, y tome lo que no tengo otra cosa mejor.

Ma. Este tocado, este cuadro, ésta gantilla de perlas, este regalillo, y este avanillo, ésta dos pares deguitos de flores, y ésta pretina, me parçen bien, todo lo de mas no.

Th. Quanto monta todo esto?

Me. Todo monta tres cientos reales.

Th. Tres cientos años esté de vn lado quien tal diere.

Me. Pues por que no le alcança a v. m. ésta maldición dos cientos, y ochenta.

Th. No entiendo bien ésta cuenta.

Me. * Dos veces ciento y cuarenta.

Ma. Buena ésta la copla, no han de ser mas que dos cientos y cincuenta en todo.

Me. Con v. m. el perder es ganar, pues manda que se a anfi, yo no hablare mas palabra.

Th. Para que quiere hablar mas, si con las habladas ha hecho su agósto.

Me. Por cierto señor de este agósto, po- ca

* But not of feathers, for they se no feathers in Spaine.

* i. Seauen pound ten shillings.

* Dos veces, se refiere a ci- ento y tam- bién al qua- renta.

Me. Call you this bad, I beleue that you are of a worse condition then the Philosopher Democritus, which found nothing in the world, which had not a fault.

Th. I say this without Democritus, that there is nothing perfect in the world.

Me. This is to be verifized in natural things, for in those things of arte, there may be perfection, every thing in his kinde.

Th. Why what thinke you that arte is any thing else but a follower of nature, and if nature hath not her perfection, much leſſe shall there be any in arte his follower.

Me. Sir I am not a Philosopher, neither will I contend with your worship, I would my merchandizes had their perfection in the price.

Ma. If they haue it not in their worship, they cannot haue it in their price.

Me. Nove ladies, see that which best likes you, and take it, for I haue no better.

Ma. This kerchiefe, this bande, this necklace of perles, this muffe, and * this fanne, these two paire of gloves perfumed, and this girdle likes me, all the rest I care not for.

Th. How much comes all this to?

Me. All comes to * three hundred riales, or sixe pences.

Th. Let him lie three hundred yeeres on one side that should give somuch.

Me. Then because this curse may not light upon you, give two hundred and fower score.

Th. I understand not well this reckoning.

Me. Twise a hundred, and twise fortie.

Ma. This copla is well, it shoulde be no more then two hundred and fiftie in all.

Me. Wish your worship to loſe is gaine, seeing you command ſo, I will not ſpeak a word more.

Th. Why would you ſpeak any more, if with that which is ſpoken you haue made your barrenſt.

Me. Truly ſir, of this barrenſt I haue gotten

ca cosecha he cogido.

Th. Señor si hiziera buena ſementera cogiera mas.

Me. Aun tengo aquí otras muchas mer- caderías muy curiosas que v. m. no ha visto.

Ma. Que ſon?

Me. Sartillas, joyciles, cintas de resplan- dór, brocaderes, rodetes cofas de oro, arandelas, alacucellos, gor- gueras de red, canifas labradas, gargantillas de pérlas, y ámbar, todo género de afeite y de perfumes, vía v. m. ſile con- tenta algo.

Ma. Otro dia vernámos mas de espacio para ver todo eſto.

Th. Pareceme ſeñor que es vuestro ofi- cio, como el de los torneros en- gaña muchachos y ſaca dinea- ros.

Me. Pues es mi ſeñora Margarita mu- chacho?

Th. Basta que ſea engañada.

Me. A fe que no ha de ſavcr poco quien la ha de engañar.

Th. Engañárſe ha ella misma a ſi miſ- ma.

Me. Como?

Sh. Dando dineros por estas bugerías que relúzen yno es ſro todo, y quando váya a casa, ſe hallará con no nada entre dos platos.

Me. Para que es el dinero ſi no para lu- zirſe con ello.

Th. Se que esto aunque relúze no lúze.

Ma. Ya os he dicho ſeñor, que os vais al coriente de la de mas gánce, y pues os caſáſteſt como los otros pásſa por donde los otros, no andeis por los eſtrémos que todo hombre eſtreñado no eſtá vn dedo de loco, étas ſon car- gas de el caſamiento.

Th. La ayuda de el eſcaravajo que de- xa la carga quanto le ayudan.

Ma. Aora

ten but a little fruit.

Th. If you had made your ſeede time bet- ter, you had reaped more.

Me. Yet haue I many other merchandizes very fine, that your worship hath not ſeen yet.

Ma. What are they?

Me. Chaines of teat, amber, or ſuch like, tablet jewel, girdles faire to ſee ro, cloſt of gold the worſer fort, head rolles, cofas of gold, ſuppor- ters, gorgets of net worke, wrought ſhirts or ſmokes, necke laces of pearles and amber, all kinde of painting, and perfumes, ſee if you like any.

Ma. We will come another day, more at lea- ſure to ſee all this.

Th. It ſeemeth to me ſir, that your trade is as that of the * turners, which de- * i. Make tops cernes boies and gets money. for children.

Me. Why is my Lady Margaret a boy?

Th. It ſufficeth that ſhe be deceived.

Me. In faſh, he is not to know a little that muſt deceiue her.

Th. She her ſelfe will deceiue her ſelfe.

Me. How?

Th. In giuing money for these childiſh toyes, which ſhine and yet are not all gold, and when ſhe goes home, it will be founde nothing betweene two platters.

Me. Why is money made, but to make ſher therewith?

Th. I knowe that this, although it glittēr double, it ſhines not.

Ma. I haue alreadie told you ſir, that you goe the common corſe of the moſt, & ſeeing you haue married an other man haue, paſſe that way as other men doe go not by extremities, for * The nature of euerie man that is in his extremitie, the beetle in the cow-turd when another comes to a foote, ſhe be the charges of ma- help him, leaves all: ſo in mar- riage.

Th. The helpe of mariage * like the helpe of the beetle under the cow-turd when another comes to which forſakes the burden as ſoone tainteth wife, as they helpe him, beforſakes her.

Ma. Sir,

Ma. Aora señór éstas son pendéncias que se han de reunir en casa vámimos.
 Th. Vámimos señóra, toma vuéstro dínero Señór mercadér.
 Me. Yo quedo muy contento y beso a v.m. las manos y veá si me manda otra cosa.
 Th. Que consalud que tengamos, nunca mas nos veámos.
 Me. Por cierto Señór, yo no soy tan yngrato, que cada dia quería ver a v.m. por mi casa.
 Th. Yo creo que queríades ver mi bolsa mas no a mi.
 Me. No soy tan codicioso como a v.m. le parezco.
 Th. No digo yo que lo soy, pero apostaré que querís mas un real de a cuatro, que uno de a dos.
 Me. Poradivino le podrían av.m. castigar.
 Th. Lo que con los ojos veo con el déodo lo adivino.
 Ma. A Dios mercadér.
 Me. Beso a v.m. las manos mi Señóra.
 Ma. Vámimos a ora a la lonja a comprár fédas.
 Th. Que querís comprár Señóra?
 Ma. Que terciopelo, raso, damasco, taftán, rígo, gorgorán, chamelote, lanillas para vestirlos a vos y a mi.
 Th. Para esto es menestér otro dia y a es tarde vamos a comér que mañana ya reénos a comprár esto.
 Ma. Vamos pues aunque yo mas quisiera que quedára oy todo hecho, que no tener que salir mañana otra vuelta.
 Th. Anda, que bien os holgáis de passárt un rato, para que me queréis hazer entender de el cielo cebóllala?
 Ma. No séais maliçioso que no medräis.
 Th. Muchácho corre, llama a el platéiro que venga a pesar la plata y por su dínero.

Ma. Sir, these are quarrels to be chidden out at home. Let us goe.
 Th. Let us goe, take your money Master Merchant.
 Me. I am very well content, and kisse your hands, and see if you command any thing els.
 Th. Some may haue health that we never see one another more.
 Me. Truly sir I am not so ingratefull, but that euerie day I would see your worship by my house.
 Th. I beleeme you would see my purſe rather then me.
 Me. I am not so covetous as I seeme unto you.
 Th. I say not that you are, but I will lay a wager, that you had rather haue two ſhillings then one.
 Me. They might well puniſh you for a ſoothſayer.
 Th. That which with the eies I ſee, I coniecture with my finger.
 Ma. God be with you merchant.
 Me. Ladie I kiffe your hands.
 Ma. Let us goe now to the exchaunge to buy ſilkes.
 Th. What would you buy?
 Ma. What, plaine velvet, damaske, tafata, vncus veluet, gogram, chamelet, farge, to cloath you and my ſelfe.
 Th. For all this another day will ſerue, it is late now let us goe to dinner, for to morrow we will goe to buy this.
 Ma. Let us goe then, although I would rather that al were done to day, then to come foorth another turne to morrow.
 Th. Goe, for you take good pleasure to walke a while, wherfore you would make me beleeme the moone is made of a greene cheeſe?
 Ma. Be not maliçious, for you ſhall thrine never the ſooner.
 Th. Boy, run call the goldsmith, that he come to waigh the plate and fetch his money:

Diálogo tercero, de un combite, entre cinco cavalléros amigos, llamados, Guzman, Rodríguez, don Lorenço, Mendoza, y Oñorio, un maestre ſala, y un paje, en el qual, ſe traza de cofas pertenecientes a un combite con otras pláticas y dchos agudos.

G. O La, está ay algun paje?
 P. Señor.
 G. Sáues a caza de don Rodrigo?
 P. Si Señor.
 G. Pues vée allá, dile que le beso las manos, y que ſe parece óra de que nos veámos.
 P. Aquí está un criado de el Señor don Lorenço.
 G. Entre.
 Cr. Don Lorenço mi Señor, bésa a v.m. las manos y embia a ſaber ſi está en casa, por que tiene un negocio que tratar con v.m.
 G. Que beso a ſu merced las manos, y que yo fuera a la Suya, a befarle las ſino tuviéra una ocupación forçosa que esperar, la qual tanbien toca a ſu merced que ſi viniére, ſerá el bien venido y le tratará de todo.
 Cr. Beso a v.m. las manos.
 G. Anda con Dios, ola Dezid a el maestre ſala que hágase ponér éstas mafas, que vernán ya los convidados.
 M. Señor v.m. como ſe quíere ſervir oy, a la Italiana, o a la Francéza, o a la Ynglesa, o a la Flamenca, o a la Todéſca?
 G. De todos ellos eſtrémos me ſacád un medio, no quiero tantas ceremonias, como el Italiano, ni quiero tanta curiosidad, como el Francés, ni quiero tanta abundancia, como el Yngles, ni quiero que la comida ſea tan larga, como el Flamenco ni tan unida

G. Ho, is there any Page there?
 P. Sir.
 G. Dost thou knowe master Rodrick his house?
 P. Yes, sir.
 G. Then go thither and tell him that I commend me to him, and if he thinketh good now, that we may meeke together.
 P. Heere is a ſervant of ſir Lorenço.
 G. Let him come in.
 S. Sir Lorenço my master commandeth him unto your worship, and ſendes me to know whether you be at home, for bee haſt a busines to entrate of with you.
 G. I thank him, and I woulde haue come unto his house to haue ſaluted him, if I had not ſtarried beere about a busines of importance, the which alſo concerneſ him, if bee come he ſhall be welcome, and wee will talk at large.
 S. I take my leaue of your worship.
 G. God be with you. Ho tell the gentlemanſher that he make the tables to be covered, for the queſts wil come by and by.
 V. Sir will your worship haue your ſeruice today, after the Italian, after the French, after the English, after the Flemish; or after the Dutch manner?
 G. Of all theſe extremes take now out one meane, I will not haue ſo many ceremonys as the Italian, neither will I ſo much curioſitie as the French, neither ſuch abundaunce as the English, neither will I that the meale be ſo long as the Flemings; nor ſo moche as the Dutch

tumida como el tudesco, mas de todos estos estremos, compóneme un mediodía a la Española.

M. Así se hará como v. m. lo manda.

* In Spaine they coole their wine by setting the flagons in snow water.

* Ribadavia a white facke growing in Galicia about a village called Ribadavia.

* Wine of S. Martin the most delicate wine of Spaine growing about S. Martin a towne in the kingdom of Toledo Spaine.

* Because they have had small conuertion together to increaselove.

R. Beso a v. m. las manos.

G. Como estás. v. m. paréce que coxéa.

R. Díme yn golpe a clapear de el cavarillo en esta espinailla.

G. En ora mala sea, veámos si es algo.

R. * No señor, sino que es como dízen dolor de codo, dolor de espóso, duele mucho y dura poco.

G. Mas vale así.

R. Como tiene, v. m. a mi señora doña Mariy a toda su casa?

G. A servicio de, v. m. aunque ella por no avér me ynbidia dixo, que pues yo comía con mis amigos, ella le quería y a comér con sus amigas.

R. Hizo su mérçed muy discretamente, en pagárle a v. m. en la misma moneda.

M. Todos estos señores convidados están aquí, y la comida a punto quando vueslas mercedes fueren servidos, se podran asentár.

G. * Señor don Lorénço, v. m. tiene las mañas de el Rey que adonde no estás no le hällan.

L. Y v. m. quiere parecerse Alcina de quien dice Orlando que por engaño, trayalos hombres a gozar de sus regalos.

G. Pero, no serán vuellas mercedes convertidos en animales como ella hazía.

L. * No me alegúro, que dexé de bolverse

Dutch, but of all these extremes, compound me a meane after the Spanish fashion.

V. So shall it be as your worship commandeth.

G. Let your chiefest care be that the meat be hot, and * the drinke coole.

V. What wines will your worship haue?

G. Of all sortes, white facke, deepe red brackish wine, hallocke, claret, candie, * Ribadavia, * S. Martin, Toro, and Cider, for that there may be of every sorte.

P. Heere commeth master Roderick.

G. Oh sir you are as welcome as the good yeere.

R. Sir I thank you heartily.

G. How do you sir, it seemes you halt.

R. I hit my selfe a blowe in lighting from my horse, in this shun bone.

G. In ill time, let vs see if it be any thing.

R. No sir, it is (as they say) like the paine of a blow on the elbow, or the sorrowe of a bridegrome, * it greeveth much and is quickly done.

G. It is the better.

R. How doth my lady Mary your wife, and all your familie.

G. At your service, although she saies (not because she enuies me) that since I banquett with my friendes, she would go to dinner to her friends.

R. She dealt very discreetely to paie you with the same money.

V. All the gentlemen that are invited are heere, and dinner is readie, when your worships please, you may sitte downe.

G. Sir Lorenço you haue the propertie of a king, that where he is not, there they finde him not.

L. And you will be like Alcina of whom Orlando makes mention, which brought men to take pleasure in her dainties to entrap them.

G. But you shall not be turned into beastes as she turned them.

L. I am not assured of that, for some of us

versé alguno en çorrá.

R. * De buen vino quien quiera se caña vna en el año.

G. Cada vno su alma en su palma, qual el tiempo tal sea el tiéto. Ea Señores tómen fillas v. s. mercedes y sienten se.

L. Déxenos v. m. ante todas cosas contemplar vn rato la curiosidad de la misa.

R. * No tiene mas piezas yn juego de maestre corál, que están hechas de las servilletas.

O. Yo aqui veo vna galera, que no le falta mas, que la chusina y palaminta.

M. Pues acá estás vn cavalloque no sé yo, si el cavallo de Tróya era tan bien hecho.

L. Amime ha caido ensuerte el escudo de Hércules.

R. Y este que estás aquí, que es?

M. A mi me parece, que es una pirámida de las de Egípto.

O. Es el sepulcro de máusalo, o la torre de babel.

G. Aora déxen esto vuellas mercedes y siéntense, si, son servidores.

R. No se puede deixar de mirar el castillo de la ensalada.

L. Por mi vida, que no tiene mejor vista el de Milán.

G. Si cada cosa se ha de mirar de por si, yr se nos ha el dia en flores. Cadavna tire su filla, que ésta no es méta de cumplimientos.

O. No los déve avér entre amigos.

G. Yo soy yñimicísluno de cerimónias.

R. * A mi no me parecen bien ningunas, si no son las que haze la yglésia.

G. Ola, plátos, tome v. m. este señor don Lorénço.

L. Haga v. m. parasi, que lo mismo hará cada vno.

R. No se qual sea mejor visto este que vñamos en Espana o el que se vñá en ynglaterra.

G. Que

may suffer himselfe to be * turned * i. To bedrunk into a foxe.

R. Who soever loues good wine, * hunts the foxe once a yere. * i. Whips the cat, or is drunke.

G. Every one holdes free will in his once a yere. hands, as the timer requires so frame thy desires. Go to gentlemen betake your selues to your chaires and sit downe.

L. Suffer vs I prae above all things to behold a while the curiosities of this table.

R. A inglar hath no more inuentiones and pieces then are made in these * ta-kins at a banquet or inuiting

O. I see heere a gallie shere wants nothing in Spaine set out but the gallie slaves and the with duers saciones, as of beastes, birds,

M. And here is a horse, that I know not if Oc. this the the horse of Troy were so wel made. Macbethsala alwaies deth.

L. And heere hath fallen to my lot Her- cules shielde.

R. And this which is heere what is it?

M. It seemes to me to be one of the * Pirá- mides of Egypte.

O. Or it is Mausalus * Tombe, or the to- ther, but two of them were rec- oned one of the seven wonders of the world.

G. Now leave off this, and sit downe if it please you.

R. One cannot choose but looke vpon the falter made like a castle.

L. In faiß the castle of Milan is no bet- ter to see to.

G. If we must stand to behold every thing the world, and by it selfe, the time will be gone was built by him without doing any thing. Euerie wife Artemisa.

O. They ought not to be among friends.

G. I am the greatest enemis in the worlde to ceremonies.

R. None of them seeme good unto me, ex- cept it be those which the church makes.

G. Hola, * dishes. Take this sir Lorenço. * They eate in little dishes their meat & not vpon trenchers in Spaine.

L. Make a dish for your selfe, for euerie one will do the like.

R. I knowe not which is the better custome which we use in Spaine, or that which is used in England.

G. What

may suffer himselfe to be * turned * i. To bedrunk into a foxe.

G. Que es el v'so de ynglaterra?
R. Comer primero lo cozido, que lo afado, nos otros hazémos a el reves.
L. Segun réglas de medicina primero se devén comér los manjares que son mas duros de digestión.
G. Y está esto en razón para que se venga a hazer la digestión en vn tiempo.
L. Pues que sea mas duro de digestión, lo afado que lo cozido, es cosa clara.
O. Yo como soy mas goloso, hallo otra razón.
L. Qual es?
O. Que toda cosa asada, es mas sabrosa que la cozida, y así, yo lo querria a el principio por que sobre buen cimientito buen edificio le hize.

* He that is silent gathereth reasons to confute his adversary.

* Saint Martin gaue a peice of his cloake to a poore man, and wine of Saint Martin the most daintie of all Spaine.

* He alludeth to wine of Toro, wine called vino de Toro, which is a Bull, as also a townes name.

Me. Pues yo aunque callo, piédras a paño.
R. Anda v. m. discreto, que obéja que bála becado piérde.
G. A mi me paréce que ándan ya en seco cítos molinos.
L. De la boca me lo quité v.m.
G. Pues si yo lo quito, júto es que yo lo ponga. Ola, dad nos de bevré, cada vno pida lo que mas gusto le dére, que de todo ay.
R. Pájeyo soy muy devoto de a quel santo que partió la capa con el pobre.
P. A buen entendedor pocas palabras, de lo de sant Martin quíere v.m.
R. O como eres discreto, Dios me de siempre contienda, conquier me entienda.
L. Pues yo vn tiempo fui torero, y me holgáva siempre con * toros bravos.
G. Señores yo brindo a quien tossiére.
O. * Vala me Dios y que resfriados que estamos todos, no se tosté mas en vn sermon de quarcima.
R. Esa gracia, dízen que tenemos los Españoles que somos como mónas

G. What is the maner of England?
R. To eate their sodde meat first before their roast, we doe quite contrarie.
L. According to the rules of Phisicke, men ought first to eate those meates which are most hard of digestion.
G. And that stands with reason, because digestion may be made togither.
L. Then that roastmeate is more hard of digestion then the sodde, it is a thing out of doubt.
O. I that am a great eater, finde another reason.
L. What is it?
O. That every thing roasted is more sweet to the taste then the sodde, and so therefore woulde I haue it at the first, for upon a good foundation, a good building is made.
M. * Although I hold my peace, I gather vp stones.
R. You saie very right, for that sleepe that bleateleth loseth a bit.
G. Methinkes thefe milles go now drie.
L. You tooke it out of my mouth.
G. If I tooke it out, it is reason I shoulde put it in. Hola, give vs drinke, enerie one aske for that which he likes best, for there is of every sorte.
R. Page, I haue great devotion to that * Saint which departed with a peice of his cloake to a poore man.
P. To a good understander a worde is enough, you woulde haue that of Saint Martin.
R. O how you are in the right, God send me to dispute alway with him that understandeth what I say.
L. I was once a courser of bulls, and I alwaies tooke pleasure in fierce bulls.
G. Gentlemen, I drinke to him that shall cough.
O. God blesse me, and what coldes we haue all taken, there is not more coughing in a lerten sermon.
R. This fashion (they say) that we Spaniards haue, that we are as apes, whicb

mónas amigos de hazer lo que vemos hazer a otros.
L. * Ansí dize vn refrán, si no hago lo que veo, todo me meo.
G. Cada vno alga de su perdiz, y la aderéce coino mejor le pareciére, ay astán limones, limas, naranjas, pimienta, y todo lo demás.
R. * La perdiz, dízen los médicos, que se a de comér entre tres compañeros porque no haga mál.
L. Tienen razón que han de ser el hombre, vn gato, y vn pérro.
O. Vuéstras mercedes no han notado la variedad de asados que aqui nos han traído.
R. Que está debaxo de aquella enramada?
G. Vna cabéça de javalí.
R. Estóncés ramos de tavérna son aquello.
L. Antes a el contrario que el ramo en la tabérna llama a los borrachos a el vino, y aquellos lláman a el mismo vino, así como la piédra ymán el azero.
O. A Señor Mendóza parti de ese Xigóte con vueletros amigos.
M. * Señor el mio murió súbito.
R. Paréce que haveis respondido, un gran A deficio i. disparate.
O. Pues aunque lo paréce, no lo es, que asú provecho ha hablado el señor Mendóza.
R. Pues, si no nos lo declara, nos alardremos de dúbda.
M. Señor, es el cafo, que dos compañeros llegaron a una venta y como no uviese otra cosa que ceñar, que una gallina asada, el uno de ellos que tenía buena hambre, y era hombre astuto, díxo a el otro compañero, entanto que yo apáro ésta gallina, contáme de que murió vueltero padre: el otro se comenzó a enternecer, y con lágrimas le relató un proceso bien largo de la enfermedad de su padre, y como avía muerto, en lo qual tardó

whicb doe that whicb they see o-
thers to doe.
L. So saith the proverbe, If I doe not what I see, I all to be pisse me.
G. Every one fatten on his partridge and order him as best shall seeme good unto him, there are limons and oringes, pepper, and all thingz else.
R. A partridge, as phisitions say, is to be eaten betweene threes companions, that he may doe no harme.
L. They say true, that is, betweene a man, a cat and a dog.
O. You haue not marked the varietie of the roast, which here they haue brought us.
R. What is under those greene boughes?
G. The head of a wilde boare.
R. Then it is the busb of a tauerne.
L. Rather the contrarie, for the tauerne busb invites those that loue drinke to the wine, and thes boughes invites or drawes unto it wine it selfe, even as the loadstone draweth to it steele.
O. A master Mendóza parethia roast leg of muiston with your friends.
M. Sir mine died suddenly.
R. It seemes you haue answere with a speech quite beside the purpose.
O. Although it seeme, it is not so, for master Mendóza hath spoken it for his aduantage.
R. But if he do not expound it, we shall not know what it meanes.
M. Sir, this it is, that two companions came to an Iane, upon the high way, and as there was nothing else to suppe withall, but one bee roasted: one of them whicb was well hungrie & a craftie fellow, saide to the other companion, in the meane while that I breake up and order this hen, recount unto me whereof your father died. The other began to be tender barded, and with teares related unto him a long proesse of the sicknes of his father, & how he died, wherin he stood so long, that when he remembred

tardó tanto, que quando acordó ya el otro fe avía comido, casi toda la gallina, el hallando se burlado, quiso esquitarse y díxo le compañero, pues yo os he contado la muerte de mi padre, contáne vos, la, de el vecstro, el compañero, por no perder. La parte que le quedáva y concluir presto razones, respondió, Señor, el mió murió supito: con la qual Repucitá el otro quedó muy burlado y el le ayudó a despachar lo que faltava.

R. Pues aquí no corre ese riesgo.
M. No, pero yo soy como el cucillo que no canto bien hasta que tengo el estómago lleno.

L. Con licencia de el señor Guzman quiero ymbiar esta pella de manjar blanco a un amigo.
G. Con mi licencia no yrá sola si no la acompaña v. m. con aquel pávoo, este faisan o el francolin.

R. Por vida de don Lorenço es amigo o amiga?
L. ¿Quécris que confiesse sin tormento.
G. Y quando os le den antes mártir que confesor.
O. O que reverenda que viene nuestra madre la olla.

R. Y bien adornada de todas sus pertenencias.
M. Yo deseo saber, donde o porque le llamaron olla podrída?

L. Metaforicamente, porque así como en vn muladár se púdren muchas cosas diferentes, y de todas se haze la batúra así la olla que es compuesta de muchas cosas se viene a hazcir vn guizado o potaje.

M. Tan buena metáfora fue esa como el que llamó Rey a el que guarda los puercos.

O. Por mi pasatiempo yo me quiero poner acontar de quantas cosas está compuesta su mercé de nuestra olla, carnero, vaca, tocino.

d.L. ¿Esa

membred himselfe, the other had alreadie eaten almost all the hen, he finding himselfe mocked, would quite himselfe, and saide vnto him, companion, seeing I haue tolde you the death of my father, doe you tell me now the death of your father: his companion for that hee would not loose that part whiche remained, and because he would be short answered, Sir, my father died suddenly, with which answere he gaue his fellow a scoffe, and himselfe time to dispatch the rest.

R. But here is not the like danger.
M. Although not, I am like the cuckow, which sing not vntill I haue my stomacke full.

L. With leue of Master Guzman, I will send this round ball of * Manjár blanco to a friend.
G. With my leue it shall not goe alone, but that you accompane with it, this peacock, this feasant, or this francolin bird.

R. I pray you hartily Sir Lorenço, is it a friend or no friend?
L. Will you that I confess without the racke?
G. And when they doe racke you, rather prooue a martyr then a confessor.
O. O what a reverend person comes here, our mother the meat.

R. And well adorned with all her appurtenances.
M. I desire to knowe, from whence or why they called it * Olla podrída.

L. Metaphorically, because even as in a dung hill many different things rot together, and of all these they make dung for the field: even so the pot which is compounded of many things is made one iellie or porage.

M. This was as good a metaphor as that of him, which called the king the keeper of hogs.

O. For my recreation I will set my selfe to reckon, of how many things this worshipfull the pot, is compounded, first mutton, beefe, and bacon.

L. These

d.L. ¿Esa son las tres potencias de la olla como las de la alma, memoria, entendimiento, voluntad.

O. Luego se sigue repollo, návovs, cebollas, ajos.

d.L. ¿Esa son las cuatro virtudes cardinales.

O. Cavécas y pies de áves, culantro verde, alcarabea, cominos, todas especias, las de mas yerbias, y no las conósco, otro las quente.

d.R. Lo que yo contaré despues, será lo bien que me ha sabido.

d.L. De el marques chapin vitelio Ytalián, que fue uno de los mas valientes soldados que ha tenido aquella nación, se quenta que quando fue a España le dieron tanto gusto estas ollas, que nunca querría comér en su casa, si no que yendo por la calle ollía en casa de algún labrador rico, adonde se comía alguna olla de éstas, y se entráva allá y se sentáua a comér con el.

d.R. Devíalo de hazer por comér a costa agena.

L. No, que antes que saliese mandáva a su mayordomo pagássle toda la costa de la olla.

M. Pare, mira como pónes esse plato no deribes el salero.

L. Si, si, guarda, que es el aguero de los mendozas.

R. Ya todos somos Mendozas en eso.

L. Esta rafra nos quedó de la gentilidad.

M. Hemos visto experiencias muy verdaderas.

O. ¿Créo en Dios y no en putas viñas.

M. Esa son de las que yo me procuro siempre guardar.

R. O señor Guzman para que es esto que se traé agora?

G. Dízen que para comér.

R. Si, pero era menester hazer nuevos estómagos, en que echálo.

O. Mandárlos hazer de barro a truéco de

L. These are the three powers of the pot, as the three powers of the soule, memory, understanding, will.

O. Now followe cabbage, turneps, onyons, garlick.

L. These be the fower cardinall vertues.

O. The heade and feete of birdes, the berber carobes or S. Johns herbe, comines, all sortes of splices, the most part of herbes, I know them not, let another speake of them.

R. That which I will saie of it shall be the good I haue tasted in it.

L. Of marques Chapin Vitelio, an Italian, which was one of the most valiant soldiers, which that nation hath had, it is saide, that when he went to Spaine, these hodgepots liked his taste so well, that he never woulde dine in his owne house, but that going in the streete, where hee smelt in the house of any rich farmer, where any of these hodgepots were eaten, there he entred, and sat downe to dinner with him.

R. Belike hee did that to dine at another mans charges.

L. No, for before he went out of dores hee commanded his steward, to paye all the cost of the hodgepots.

M. Staie, looke howe thou putes this platter, do not throne downe the salt-seller.

L. Yea, yea, take heede, for it is the Mendozas malum omen.

R. We are all Mendozas in this.

L. This trace doth remaine to vs from the Gentiles.

M. Wee haue seene many true examples hereof.

O. I beleue in God, and not in olde wines tales.

M. Those are they from which I alwaies seeke to keepe my selfe.

R. O master Guzman, wherfore is this that they bring now?

G. They saie for to eate.

R. Yea, but it were need to make stomachs to receive it.

O. Canse them to bee made of claes, for a small

* A meat made of breasts of hens, milke, sugar, rice beaten, and pulses mixed withall, one of the damies best meates yfed.

* A rotten or putrified pot. Also a hotch-potch of many meates together

de poco dinero.

M. Estas tortas reales, son como cuero que no ocupa lugar.

^{* Made of the}
beades, liuers,
barts, breastes,
feete, of duckes
geese, or other
birds, &c.
^{* Of past of}
almonds and
sugar, eggs,
breasts of hens,
milkes, cynamon,
and divers sortes
of spices verie
like Manjar
blanco.

L. Yo tengo de provár esta pepitoria. R. Yo conel ^{* manjár} real me acomo do. G. No ay quien prueve elotros guisados, éstos torrefnos lampreados, aquello adobado, el carné verde, las albóndigas, ni lo demás.

T. Todo ésto es como Pedro por mas. O. O como alla voy no hago mengua. G. Alcalo pues muchacho desenbarça y trae aquella fruta de tartén. P. Aquí está señor, y la melója y todo. R. Ésto allá a los aguados, que la borcha no quiere pásá.

G. Traé pues la fruta de postre, camuqués, péras, azeitunas, nueces, avellanas, y la caja de mermelada. L. Hasta quando hemos de comér? R. ^{*} Hasta enfermár, como dice el refrán. L. Y despues ayunár hasta sanár. O. Levánta esta mesa paje, que es ya gula tanto comér. M. ^{*} Yo he perdido la gana, como si me la quitáran con la mano.

L. El mejor remedio, que hallaron los filósofos, contra la hambre, fue este. R. ^{*} Esta filosofía algo es gruésa de hilacha. O. Mejor se podrá dezir verdád apurada que ya favéis lo que es. L. ^{*} Ya se que verdádes apuradas son neçedades.

O. Mas pulido lo quería yo dezir. R. Como? O. Yndiscréctiones. d.L. Tanto monta cortár, como desatar,

L. I will prove this ^{* Pepitorio} or gallimaufrie. R. I do apply my selfe to this riall dish of meate. G. Is there no bodie to prove these other meates, these hoggs liuers with the hogs caule fried with the fat, that hodgepot of mutton, mutton stuffed with parsy, the chopped meat made into round bals, neither ther rest. L. All this is as Peter too much.

O. Oh as I goe there I never faile. G. Take off boy, rid the table, and bring these fritters. P. Here it is Sir, and the ^{* Melója} and all. R. That there is for those that drinke water, for one that loves wine loves not to eat ^{* raisins}. G. Bring fruit for the last service, pippins, peares, olives, walnuts, small nuts, and the boxe of marmalade.

L. Till when shall we eat? R. Until we be sick, as saith the proverbe. L. And afterward to fast till wee bee in health. O. Take away this table, Page, for it is gluttonie to eat so much. M. I haue lost my stomack, as though they had taken it from me with ones hand.

L. The best remedie that ever philosphers found against hunger, was this. R. This philosophie is somewhat of a grosse thred. O. Better may you say a refined trussh, you know what I meane. L. I knowe that refined trusshes are fooleries.

O. I would give it a better terme. R. How? O. Indiscréctiones. L. It comes all to one, to cut it off or untie it.

small price of money.

M. These riall tarter are as the bodie which filleth no place.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.</div

O. Ora por quitar todos de contienda
yo querido dar un medio y sea
este la primera.

M. Muy bien aveis dicho que es medio
entre los extremos.

d.L. Yo entiendo que se llamo primera,
porque tiene el primer lugar
entre los juegos de naipes.

d.R. Alto, que ha de ser el tanto?

M. Cuatro reales y diez y seis de saca.

d.L. Pues barajá estos naipes bien.

O. Yo alzo por mano, figura uno de fer,
no querria yo yr hecho figura
sin blanca.

d.R. Yo un as alcé.

d.L. Yo un quattro.

M. Yo vn feis, con que soy mano.

O. Véngan las cartas que yo las doy
una, dos, tres, cuatro. Vna, des,
tres, cuatro.

M. Paso.

d.R. Paso.

d.L. Paso.

O. Enbido un tanto.

M. Nole quiero.

d.R. Nole quiero.

d.L. Yo por fuerça avré de querer, echad
cartas.

M. Echadme cuatro cartas he aqui mi
tanto.

d.R. He aqui el mio, cada uno meta el
suyo.

M. Buelvo a pasár.

d.R. Yo tambien.

d.L. Yo hago lo proprio.

O. Yo enbido mi resto.

M. Quiero le.

d.R. Yo tambien.

b.L. Pues yo no me puedo echar.

M. Yo hize una primerilla.

d.L. Yo voy a flux.

M. No querria yo que le hiziesedes.

d.L. Es ella buena promixidá?

M. * La caridad bien ordenada comi-
énca de si mismo.

O. Yo he hecho cincuenta y cinco con
que mató su primera.

d.L. Yo flux con que tiro.

d.R. No juego mas a este juego.

M. Niyo a otro ninguno que voy a vn
negocio

O. Now to take away all occasion of strife,
I will give a meane, and let it be
Primera.

M. You have saide very well, for it is a
meane betweene extremes.

L. I take it that it is called Primera, be-
cause it hath the first place at the
play at cardes.

R. Let vs goe, what is the summe that we
play for?

M. Two shillings stake, and eight shillings
rest.

L. Then shuffe the cardes well.

O. I lift to see who shall deale, it must be
a coate card, I would not be a coate
with never a blanke in my purse.

R. I did lift an ace.

L. I a fower.

M. I a sixe, whereby I am the eldest hand.

O. Let the cardes come to me, for I deale
them, one, two, three, fower, one,
two, three, fower.

M. Passe.

R. Passe.

L. Passe.

O. I set so much.

M. I will none.

R. Ile none.

L. I must of force see it, deale the cardes.

M. Give me fower cards, Ile see as much as
he sets.

R. See heere my rest, let every one be in.

M. I am come to passe againe.

R. And I too.

L. I do the selfe same.

O. I set my rest.

M. Ile see it.

R. I also.

L. I cannot give it ouer.

M. I was a small prime.

L. I am flux.

M. I would you were not.

L. Is this good neighbourhod?

M. Charite well placed, doth first beginne
with ones selfe.

O. I made fwe and fiftie, with which I win
his prime.

L. I flux whereby I draw.

R. I play no more at this play.

M. Neither I at any other, for I must goe
about

negocio que me ympórtala.

d.L. Pajes toma cada quatro reales de
barato.

Pa. Centuplum acipias.

Pa. En el cielo lo hallo v. m. colgado de
vn garavato.

about abusines that concernes me.
Pages take euerie one two shillings a
piece of the winnings.

P. I pray God you may receive it a hun-
dred fold.

P. In heauen I pray God you may finde it
hanged on a booke.

Diálogo quarto, entre dós amigos lla-
mados el uno Mora, el otro Agular,
un moço de mllas y una Ventera, tratan
se en el de las cósas tocantes a el
camino con muy gra-
ciosos dichos y
obisfes.

The fourth Dialogue berweene two
friends, the one called Mora, the other
Aguilar and a mulettier and a woman Inkee-
per: Heere in are handled things pertai-
ning to the way with very pleasant
sayings, and gracious
speeches.

M. O La Pedro havéis traido mi mu-
la?

P. Señor si, aquí está la mohina.

M. Mohina es nunca buena.

P. Por que, Señor?

M. * Por que ni mula mohina, ni moça
marina, ni moço Pedro en cása,
ni Abá por Vezino, ni poy o a
la puerta, no es bueno.

P. Yo le prometó a v. m. que es mejor
esta, que la que arastró a el cura
quando dezía Dominus provi-
debit.

M. Es vieja?

P. Nunca la vi naçer, mas yo creo que
mas vieja era su madre.

M. Tira cozes?

P. Nunca una sola.

M. Siempre son a pares, camina bien?

P. Todo lo que ánda se dexa atrás.

M. Tan buenas gráciás tiene a fee que
me va enamorando.

P. Vna tiene sobre todas que es gran-
de Ostróloga.

M. Como anfis?

P. Conoce mejor que vn reloj quan-
do es medio dia, y luego pide
çebada, y si no se la dan dize
lunes

M. HO Peter haue you brought my
mule?

P. Yeasir, heere is the * Mohina.

M. Mohina is never good.

P. Why sir?

M. Bicañe neither a mule with a blacke
muffell, nor a maide that hath paf-
fed the sea, nor a seruant * Peter
in ones house, nor a neighbour ab-
bor, nor a Well at the dore, is ever
good.

P. I promise your worship that she is better
then that which dragged along
the curate when he said, Domi-
nus proidebit.

M. Is she old?

P. I saw her not foaled, but I beleene that
her dame was elder.

M. Doth she kicke?

P. Shee neuer givens one alone.

M. They are alwayes by couples, doth shee
travel well?

P. Shee neuer travels but shee leavens the
way behinde her.

M. Shee hath so good tricks in faith, that I
am in love with her.

P. One shee hath aboue all, for shee is a great
Astronomer.

M. How so?

P. Shee knowes better then a clocke when
it is noone, and foorthwith shee
lookes for promender, and if they
m 2 gine

* Lunes, meaning heire the grunting voice of a mule or horse, but Lunes properly signifieth Monday.

M. Buen remedio para esto rogar se lo con la espuela.

P. Es flaquinuna de memoria.

M. Como?

P. Aunque le hínguen vn palmo de espuela a dos paslos que da, se le ha ya olvidado.

M. * Tracilda, no se me da náda, que topado ha Sancho con su Roçino y si ella es traydora yo soy alebóso, y nos entenderemos a coplas.

P. * En yendo v.m. con cuidado hará de ella céra y Pávilo que ella con quien se descuya úfa sus tretas.

M. Echalde la filla, apretálde bien la síncha ponclde gurupéra atárrare y pretál, acorta estos estribos que yo me averné con ella.

P. Quiero poner, vnas acciones nuévas por mas seguridád.

M. Echáldel el freno, ponédel le bien el bocádo y acortád la cabeçáda mirád si está bien herráda de todos cuatro pies.

* Manos, i. the P. * En las manos, buenas herraduras forefeete, y clavos tiene, de los pies de suyo gastra.

* with kicking. M. Echáldo el coxín y porta mantéo.

A. Ea compañero hémos ya de acabár de salír oy de aqui?

M. Ya vos venís cavalgando?

A. * Vos tardáis mas en componér os que vna nóbía.

M. Vuestra mula es mansa?

A. Como vna borrega no lo veis que fuere malcta.

M. * De cl agua mánza me libre dios, que de la braba yo me guardaré.

A. A la vuestra, basta le ser mohína.

M. Mal conocéys vos aquien nunca vi- stes, pues a fee que está gran- duada por zalamánca.

A. En

lunes y no ay passar de allí.

gine her none, then she saies * lunes, and stirres not a foote from the place.

M. A good remedie for this to intreat her with the spurre.

P. She is most weake of memorie.

M. How?

P. Although you strike into her a hands breadth of the spurre, within two steps after she hath forgotten it.

M. Bring her, I care not, for Sancho hath met with his palfrey, and if she be a * knauish iade I am as knauish a rider, and we shall understand one another by couples.

P. You traueilng with her, with good beed, you may agree like the * waxe and the weeke, but shee with one that is not aware of her will plaine her part like a fencer.

M. Set on the saddle, girde her harde with the girts, put on the crooper and poitrell, make shorter these stirrups, for I will make agreement with her.

P. I will put on newe stirrup leathers for more securitie.

M. Put on the bridle, make the bit fast, make shorter the headstall, looke if she be well shod of all fower feete.

P. On the forefeete she haib good shooes and nailes, on the binder feete she * wearres out her owne hoofe.

M. Put the cushion on the saddle and she portemanteau.

A. How now companion, shall we make an end that we may get hence to day?

M. What are you come already, and a horsbacke?

A. You tarrie longer in setting your selfe in order then a bride.

M. Is your mule gentle?

A. As gentle as a lambe, do you not see he beares a male.

M. From the stilwater, God keepe me, from the raging, I will keepe my selfe.

A. For your mule, it is sufficient, that she is a mule with a blacke muzzle.

M. You hardly know him whom you never saw, but in faith this mule hath taken degree in Zalamánca.

A. In

A. En que facultad?

M. En la de la vellaquería, bachillera en ártes de tirar cózes, licenciada en léyes de vinentas de infiñenes, y doctora es en astrología y matemáticas.

A. Por esto está siempre mirando a el cielo.

M. Es por contemplar los ástros y planetas y signos y sus cursus.

A. Vámos de aquí que tenemos larga la jornada.

M. Quantas leguas pensáys caminár oy?

A. Yé querria que doze.

M. Pues ala mano de dios Pedro ten este estríbo.

A. Pedro os Llamáys compañero?

P. A servicio de v.m.

A. Pues no le hágá Dios mas mal a Pedro de elque se le alcánca.

P. No ay porque Dios de salud a su merçed.

A. Sé que las pullas no se han de echar a los amigos.

M. * De amigo a amigo chinché en el ójo.

A. Yo no quiero pléito con vos Pédro, que sabéis mucho.

P. Mas *Sábe vn torézno.

A. Moço de mulas vn punto fave mas que el diablo.

M. Pues que penfáis vos que le falta a Pedro para diablo?

P. No mas que vn año de aprendiz y vn garaváto.

A. Para que el garaváto?

P. Para facár a vuestras merçédes de la calderá quando allá váyan.

M. Nosotros no hémos de yr a elynfiérno

P. No se yrán mas lleváros hán.

M. Are dro váyas malo, ergo maledicte diabole.

A. Pedro amigo de que se haze la puta vieja?

P. De la puta mida.

M. No se haze si no deseldo y eneldo y de el cagaxón mordeldo y de el polvo de las * éras.

A. In

A. In what arte?

M. In the arte of villanie, Bachelor of the kicking art, Licentiat of lawes in Innes, and doctor in Astrologie, and the Matheematikes.

A. For this cause, shee looks alwaies towards beauen.

M. It is to contemplate the stars, planets, and signes, and their courses.

A. Let us go, for we haue a long iournay.

M. How many leagues do you think to travel to day?

A. I would willingly go twelve.

M. Then in the name of God, Peter holde this stirrup.

A. Friend are you called Peter?

M. At your seruice sir.

A. Then God do no more mischiefe to Peter, then that he knowes himselfe how to practise.

P. There is no cause why God give you health sir.

A. I know that men ought not to flout their friends.

M. One friend to another friend, a * Cinche * Chinche, a little rounde creature with many feete, in hot countries, breeding in beds, butes worse then a louse, and stinketh filthily.

A. I will not go to law with you Peter, for that you know so much.

P. A rasher of bacon fawes more.

A. A mulster knowes one point more, then bed, butes worse then a louse, and stinketh filthily.

M. Why what kinke you, what wants Peter to become a diuell?

* Saber i. To know. Aljó to a flesh-booke.

P. No more but a yeres apprenticeship, and fawor well in taste, as meat, drinke.

A. Why a flesh-hooke?

P. To pull out your worships out of the calderá when you go thither.

M. We are not to go to hell.

P. You are not sage, but they are to carrie you thither.

M. Come behinde me therefore euill spirit, Maledicte diabole.

A. Friend Peter, of what is an old whore made of?

P. Of a young whoore.

M. It is not made but of thy selfe and the floore where herb dill, & of shitting eate thy fill, & they thresh of the dust of barn floore, or of the dust their corne, and of which thou art thy selfe.

A. De cara me le vó y tiéne alpargá-
tes, y va a pie.

* Shooes of
packibred made
for footemen or
lackies to tra-
nella a foote.

M. Pedro mira que te dice no respón-
des.

P. * No oygo que soy sordo de vna
muéla.

M. * Pues a el maestro Cuchillada?

P. No me lastima mucho esta Herida
que es dada vñas arriba, pero
guarde se de el rebés que yo ti-
raré vñas abajo.

A. Pedro yo entiendo que soys vos aquel
que Llamávan de vrde malas.

P. Pues todo el mundo ojo alerta que
alguna téngo de vrdir en este
camino.

A. Pedro allí viene vn caminante échale
vna pulla.

P. Ola hermano por donde van?

C. A do?

P. En casa de la puta que os parió.

A. Buena a fee otra a el compaño-
ero que queda atrás.

P. A señor es tu el mulo?

C. Qual mulo?

P. Aquel que bescis en el culo.

A. Este cavallero que viene muy brábo
no baya fin la suya.

P. A senor v.m. a caso va a londres?

C. Si voy porque lo dezis.

P. Pues cagaxón para quien va a Lon-
dres.

M. Que bonito es Pedro si se lavasse.

P. Antes despues de lavado no valgo
nada.

A. Quanto avrémos andado Pedro?

P. * Nunca buelvo a mirar atrás, por
no ser como la mugré de Lot.

A. Quanto nos falta de aquia el primer
Pueblo?

P. Legua y miérda.

M. La legua andarímos nosotros, es otra
vos la pafaréis.

A. Pues por que se pafé sin sentir quen-
ta vñ quanto Pedro.

P. De dineros para mi le contárayo de
buena gana.

A. No

Dialogues.

A. I see him iust ouer against me, and he
hath * shooes of packibred, and hee
goes a foote.

M. Peter, hark whar be saith unto thee,
doest thou not answere?

P. I heare not, for I am deafe of one of my
chocke teeth.

M. What hath the master of Fence a blowe
or venie?

P. This wound hurts me not much, for it is
giuen with the hand upward, but
beware of the swifte blow, for I will
draw it with the hand downwards.

A. Peter I understande that you are bee
which they called a plotter of kna-
ueries?

P. Every one looke to himselfe, for I must
plot somthing this iourney.

A. Peter there commeth a traveller, be-
stowe a quip on him.

P. Hola brother, which way go they?

T. Whither?

P. To the house of the queane thy mother.

A. Good in faith, another to his compa-
nyon, which remaines behind.

P. Ho sir, is the mule yours?

T. What mule?

P. That whose arse kisse you.

A. This gentleman which goeth so bodily,
let him not passe without bis flouts.

P. Ho sir goes your worship to London?

T. Yea, I go for that you saie it.

P. Then a turd for him that goeth to Lon-
don.

M. Oh how proper a man were Peter, if he
were washed and painted.

P. Nay after I am washed I am worth no-
thing.

A. How far haue we tourneyed Peter?

P. I neuer turne to looke backe, because I
would not be as Lots wife.

A. How far haue we from hence to the
next town?

P. Aleague and a turd.

M. The league we willgoe, the other shal-
le passe.

A. That we may passe ouer this iourney
without wearfounes, tell us a tale
Peter.

P. For my part, I would tell money with a
better will.

A. Not

Dialogues.

A. No, si no algun acaecido que te avino
por estos caminos.

P. Estonces contá les hévno que me
subqedio el viaje paslado hazien-
do este camino con vn hi-
dalgo.

M. No sea muy largo que me dormiré.

P. Si se durmíre la molhina tendrá cuy-
dado de despertá le.

M. Vos le havéis levantado mil falsos
testimónios, mira quan bien ca-
mína y quan manfa va?

P. * A el freír lo verá.

A. Ea dexémos esto vaya el quanto.

P. Pocos dias ha, yo víne este caminó
con vno de los mayores habla-
dóres que he conocido en mi vi-
da y como el hablár mucho, y el
mentir son tan parientes, decía
las mas terribles mentiras que se
pueden yimaginár, pues como el
me preguntáslas vn dia que me
parecía de su buena conversa-
ción, yo le respondí que muy bien,
pero que quando contáslas algun
quanto, se Alargasse y pafasse
tanto, que dava que morirnar a
quantos le oyas, el me dixo pues
sea esta la manera quando llegue-
mos a las posadas, sienta se tu
par de mi, y si me viéres contar
algo que te parézca que voy fue-
ra de camino, tira me de la halda,
estonces yo entenderé, y me de-
termé, con este con cierto llega-
mos aquella noche a vna venta,
donde a caso avían llegado tan-
bien muchos cavalleros, y como
se asentásen a cenár y mi amo
entre ellos, yo me puse a sulado
conforme a el concierto, y como
es costumbre cada vno comenzó
a contá las maravillas que avia
visto por el mundo, llegó la vez a
el bueno de mi amo el qual dixo
que avia estado en tierra de ja-
pón, y que entre otras cofas ma-
ravillosas que allí avia visto fue
vna yglézia que tenía mil pies de
largo, a este tiempo yo que le
víde

Dialogues.

A. Not so, but some chaceunce that bath fal-
len out to bee on these waies.

P. Then I will tell you one that happened
vnto me the laste voyage I came
this way with a gentleman.

M. Let it not be too long for I will sleep.

P. If you sleepes, the she mule will be care-
full to wake you.

M. You have raised a thousand false testi-
monies aginst her, behold how wel
she travellath, and how well she go-
eth.

P. * By the frysing you shall see.

A. Well let us leaue this, forward with the coates to a wo-
man and put-
tale.

P. A little while since, I came ting downe his
this way with one of the greatest coates put up
babblers that I knew in my life, and the woman af-
as much prating and lying gre neare king if they
of kenne, he tolde the most horri- were god
ble lies that could be imagined, af- coates, Jean-
swarde, A fric-
terward as he asked me one daie, lo verá, by
what I thought of his good beha- the frysing she
sion, I made him answere, that should see.
I thought well, but that when
he did tell any tale, he passed
the bounds so much, that he gave
occasion to as many as did bear
him, to speake ill of him behinde his
backe: he tolde me, seeing it is so
when we come to our Innes, if thou
next unto me, and if thou shal see
me tell any thing that seemes unto
thee that I goe out of the way, pluck
me by the skirt, then will I under-
stand and stay my selfe, with this a-
greement we came that night to a
lodging on the high waie, wherby
chance also many gentlemen were
arrived, and as they sat them downe
to supper, and my master among
them, I set my selfe close by his side,
according to our agreement, and as
the manner is, every one began to
tell of the marvels which he had
seen in the world, she turne came to
the good man my master, who said
that he had bee in the Lande of
Iaptha, and among other maruellous
things that there he had seen was a
church, which was a thousand foote
long.

Diálogos.

vide yr tan desmandado y como estava a lerta tiro le rézio de la halda, el luego me entendio, y dixo; y vno en ancho: los cavalleros se començaron a mirar vnos a otros y a son-reyrt se hásta que vno dellos dixo, vala me Dios señor, y para que servía essa gloria tan larga y angosta, de mill pies de largo? y vno en ancho, el replicó agradezcan vuestras mercedes que me tiraron de la falda atiempo, que si no, yo les boto a Dios que yo la quadrará, fue estonçes tanta la risa de todos que a mi amo le convino aquella noche salirse de la venta, por que entre todos quedó por retrán quando alguno contáva algo que parecía mentira. Le decía el terçero quadre la v. m. que harto larga está.

M. De vna cosa me espanto yo Pedro.

P. Qual es?

M. Como pudiste durar tan largotempo con tu competitor en la facultad.

A. * Si, por que ese es tu enemigo el que es de tu oficio.

P. Esverdád que muchas veces le quise dexar por ello, y te dezia que no quería mas caminar con el, por que era tocado de mi propia enfermedad y no me dexava hazer bása.

* As at cards.

A. Y que respondió a ello?

P. Luego me prometía con juramento, que callaría tóda vna jornada para que yo habláse.

A. Y cumplió lo?

P. Tan ynpossible le éra a el poderlo cumplir como a v. m. dixerír ese pelo de asno, queha comido.

* i. Calling him
as by craft or
the judgements, or
fooleries to day
you have swal-
lowed.

M. Compañero pagado os han vuestro travajo.

A. No tenis razón Pedro ansiyo os vea zarcos a poder de nubes.

P. Antes ciegue, que mal vía.

A. * Ansi yo os vea arçobispo con mi- tra

Diálogos.

long: then I seeing him so far out of order, as I was readie prepared, plucke him by the skirt, he presently understood me, and said; and one foot in breadsh: the gentlemen began to looke one upon another, and to smite, untill one of them saide, in the name of God sir, and for what use served this church so long & narrow, of a thousand foot in length, and but one in breadsh? he replied, thanke him, that pulled me by the skirt of the garment so soone, which if he had not done, I wou to God, I had made it fower square: then was there such a laughter among all, that my master was faine that night to get him out of the Inne, for that among them all, it remained as a proverbe, when any one did tell any thing which did seeme a lie, the shirdman said unto him, make it square, for it is long enough.

M. Of one thing I woondre Peter.

P. What is it?

M. How thou couldest endure so long time, with thy competitor in thine owne facultie?

A. Tea, for he is thy enemie which is of thy owne profession.

P. It is true for many times I would leaue him for this cause, and did set him, that I would not travell no more with him, becausse he was infected with my disease, and did not suffer me to take up a tr.cke.

A. And what answere made he to this?

P. Foorthwith he promised me with an oth, that he would hold his peace all one tourney, that I might speake.

A. And did he performe it?

P. It was as impossible for him to haue power to accomplish it, as for your worship to digest this * asses haire which you haue eaten.

M. Companion, you are paid home for your labour.

A. You mistake Peter, I see you dimme sighted, by reason of cloudes.

P. Rather wist I you blinde, then that I see ill.

A. Nay rather that I may haue my sight to

Diálogos.

tra de siéte palmas.

P. Ansiyo le véa a el, Pápa higos de su mula.

A. * Echo te vna pulla * con su pullon- gillo que tu mugr te haga ciérvo y te llámen tódios cuquillo.

P. * Echo te vna pulla venida sobre mar, que los dientes se te cayan y no puedes meárr.

M. Piquemos compañero que se va ha- ziendo tarde.

A. Que hora será Pedro?

P. La de ayer a estas horas puntual- mente.

A. Esto tanbien lo dixerá mi mula si supiera hablár.

P. Soy yo Relox, que me pregunta que óra es.

A. * A lo menos * badájo, que monta tanto.

P. Y si doy adonde daré?

A. Enla cabeza de el puto de tu pa- dre.

P. Mas cerca está la suya y sonará bien, pues esta huéca.

M. Bien camina de andadura vuestra mula.

A. Y la vuestra ha bien deportánte.

M. Si no la convirtiese algunas veces en tróte que parece a elde la madre.

A. Entrémos en esta vénta a dár ceva- da y comér vn vocádo.

P. Vn bocádo no mas, mas piénsalo yo comér de vn ciento.

M. No os fabréis passar un dia sin comér Pedro?

P. * Par dios nuestro amo, como díze el vizcaíno, trípas llévan a pies que no piesa trípas.

A. * Yo tambien digo que pan y vino ánden camino que no moço garrido.

P. Paz lea en ésta casa quien está acá huépeda?

V. Quien está alla quien lláma?

P. Ay posadateñora?

V. Si señör, éntren y séan muy bien ve- nidos que todo recádo ay.

P. Que

Diálogos.

to see you an Archibishop with * a *; Caróqa, miter of seuen handbreadths high, which is a high on the head of a

A. Nay not so, but that I might also see you eat the stitlings of your mule. on the head of a bande, riding gnaw upon thy wife makes thee a row the streets bart, and they call thee chukoldé for a pun- eney one.

P. I cast the bone to gnaw upon at sea, thy teeth fall out, and thy water hold in.

M. Let us spurre on companion, for it wax- est late.

A. What is it a clocke Peter?

P. Just the same, as it was yesterday at this time.

A. Esto tanbien lo dixerá mi mule tell me, if she could speake?

P. Am I a clocke, that you aske me what it is a clocke?

A. At least thou art a clapper, which is * Badájo, a all one.

P. And if I do strike where shall I hit? by a metaphor

A. Upon the head of the buggerer thy fa- ther.

P. Your head is neere unto me, and it will sound well seeing it is hollow.

M. Your mule doth go a swift easie pase.

A. And yours ambles well.

M. If she did not change it, sometimes into a trot, which seemes like the trot of bir dam.

A. Entrémos en esta vénta a dár ceva- da and eat a bitte.

P. What one bit and no more, I think to * A Biskaine eat more then a hundred.

M. Can you not passe one daie Peter without travelling a foote faine for want of foode,

P. By God our master as the * Biskaine filled his belly, afterward were faith, the bellie carrieth the feete lustily, & said, and not the feete the bellie.

A. I also say, * that bread and wine are eith the feete, & the belly carri- trauellers, and not the lustie fro- not the feete the bellie.

P. Peace be in this house, who is heere youth without bofesse?

V. Who is there, who calls?

P. Haue you lodgging mistris?

V. Yes Sir, come in, and be very well wel- him that, al- come, for all good entertainment faint he goeth forward.

P. What

P. Que aurá que comér?
V. Ay conejos ay perdices, ay pollos, ay gallinas, ay gansos, ay ánades, ay carnero, ay vaca, ay cabrío, ay menudo de puerco.

P. Bien dixe yo que en su caña de v.m. no podía faltár puerco.

V. Ni en la suya faltará vellaco, mientras el estuviére dentro.

P. No en verdád señora, si no que me dixerón que los días pasados avía v.m. refiido bravamente con la limpíça.

V. También me dixeron a mi que avía el desterrado la Verguença de su casa.

M. Huelgo me Pedro que as topado con lo que avías menester.

P. Yauñ ella me ha menester a mi.

V. Yo por cierto, si no es para ponerle en peralvillo con doce y la maestra, no sé para que?

* Peralvillo, a mount in Spaine where they shooe malefactors to death.
* i. That arrow which hitte on the hart.

P. Aora Señora no nos digámos mas calláte, y callémos que fendas nos tengamos.

V. Ea acábe habladór de Ventaja, píalo que ha menester.

P. Deine heno, y paja, y cebáda, para las mulas.

V. Quanto quiere?

P. Dos harnéros de heno y un zelémín de cebáda.

V. Muy poco es para tres vestias.

P. Aquí no ay mas que dos qual es la otra?

V. La otra sóys vos y mastragóna que es lótras dos.

P. Si soy mas, no de paxa ni cebada porque es muy dura de digestión.

V. Mas duro es vn garróte y suele ablandar las costillas a vn vellaco.

M. Bien está no passe mas adelante señora Huelpeda quanto pónen de aquí a la ciudad.

V. Señor cinco leguas.

M. Podrémos los caminár de a quia la noche?

V. Como picáren?

M. Ay

P. What shall we haue to dinner?
H. There are conies, there are partridges, there are chickens, hennes, geese, ducks, there is mutton, there is beefe, kid, and hogs innards.

P. Well saide I, that in your house there could not want hogs flesh.

H. Nor in your house shall there want a kyane while you are wishin.

P. No in truth misstris, but they told me that anbile a goe you and cleanliness had been at bate.

H. And they told me, that you had banisched shamefastnes from your house.

M. I am glad Peter that thou hast mette with that thou haddest need of.

A. And alfoſte hath need of me.

H. I haue neede of him truly, if it be but to pu him in * Peralvillo to shooe twelue arrowes at him with the * misstris, I know not for what els?

P. Now misstris, let us saie no more, holde your peace and let us be still, for we haue a quip a peece.

H. Go to, make an end babbler in graine, & demand that you haue need of.

P. Give me hale, and straw, and prouender for the mules.

H. How much will you haue?

P. Two stunes full of hale, and a pecke of barley.

V. It is very little for three beastes.

P. Heere are no more then two, which is the other?

V. The other are you, and more devouring then the other two.

P. If I be more, it is not of straw nor barley, for it is very hard of digestion.

H. Harder is a cudgell, and yet it softeth to soften the ribs of a kyane.

M. It is well, passe no further forward missesse hostesse, how far doe they count it from hence to the citie?

H. Sir five leagues.

M. May we ride them betwixt this and night?

H. As you shal hasten.

M. Is

M. Ay algun río en el camino o algun mal passo?

V. Por do quiera, ay vna legua de mal camino.

M. Ay adonde herrár?

V. El camino no señór, las mulas si señór, y vuestras mercédes mil partes ay donde pueden herrár.

M. * Si son los yeros por amores, dignos son de perdonár.

A. Señora huéspeda cuya es ésta venta?

V. De un cavallero de la ciudad.

A. Quanto págan por ella de arrendamiento en vn año?

V. Mas que ella vale, quinientos ducados.

M. De esa fuerte, buena maña se an mestier dar a hurtar para la car la costa.

P. Esta no falta, el gáto por liebre, la carne de mula por váca, el víno pásado por agua todo va de ésta manera.

V. * Mala pasqua de Dios a el vellaco y mal san Iuán, quando ha visto el, esfío en mi venta?

P. Visto lo no, gustado lo si.

V. Vos mentís como vellaco, que nun cal tal.

P. * Aora estemos a quenta huéspeda no demos de comér a el Diablo, venga acá no se actiéra el otro dia quando yo vine por aquí con un cavallero, que le pidió le dieſſe un pedágo de carne de aquéllo que le avía dádo otro dia antes quando avía pásado por aquí, porque decía que le avía savidio muy bien, lo qual oyendo aquel niño chíquito, díxo caro nos costaría, si cada dia se nos avía de morir un Roçín.

V. Es Verdád que aquello fue aquel Roçín que se nos murió, pero estuvo tan górdio y tan fino que era mejor que carne de váca.

M. Señora huéspeda aunque mas lindo sea, no nos dee de el agóra.

V. No Señor que ya se acabó, haſta aora avía de durárá?

M. Vea-

M. Is there any river in the way, or any enſil paſſage?

H. Which may ſeuer you goe, there is a league of enſil waie.

M. Is there any place * herrár?

V. The way, no Sir, the waie, yes Sir, a erre. Alſo to thofand paſſages where you may ſhoe a horſe or mule.

M. If they be errors for lone, they are worſie to be pardoned.

A. Mistrefſe hoſteſſe, whoſe is this inne?

H. A gentelmen of the ciuit.

A. How much doe you pay for the hire of it by the yeare?

H. More then it is woorthe, ſiue hundred ducats.

M. By this meanes they had neede good ſkill to ſteale to gett out their charge.

P. That ſkill wants not, a cat for horſe fleſh, the fleſh of a mulc for beſſe, wine mixed with water, all goes in this manner.

H. God ſend the kyane an ill Easter, and an ill Midſommer, when bude you ſee this in my Iaſe?

P. I haue not ſeenē, but I haue inſted it?

H. You lie like a kyane, ſtare not neither any ſuch matter.

P. Hoſteſſe we are upon the reckoning now, * let us not giue the diſeill his dimbraule and fallow, come hither, doe you not remember the other day, when I law upon words came this way with a gentleman and ſo make the whiche requested you to giue him a peice of meat, of ihat you had giuen him the other day before, when he paffed this waie, becauſe he ſaid it liked his taſte veri well, the whiche the little child heaſing, ſaide, it woulde be dñe fleſh into us, if enery day there ſhould die a nage.

H. It is trut, that ther was a hagge which died, but bee wile ſo fat and ſo faire, that bee was better then beefe.

M. Mistrefſe hoſteſſe, althoſte he might be more fine, giue us not of that none.

H. No ſir, for he is already made an end of, what think you ſtill laſt til now?

M. Let

M. Veámos el vino que tal es.
V. El vino es tal, que basta a llevar al cielo a el, que acostumbráre a beverlo.
P. Ola nuestra áma no basta ventáre si no ercére?
V. Lo que yo digo es verdá y lo provaré que el buen vino, lleva los hombres a el cielo.
M. De que manera?
V. El buen vino cría buena sangre, la buena sangre engéndra buena condición, la buena condición pár buenas obras, las buenas obras, llévan a los hombres a el cielo.
M. Ella ha aprobado su yntención bastantemente.
A. Peró no se podrá dezir esto por arte vino.
V. Por que?
A. Por que esto mas paréce vinágre y agua.
V. Agua, no por vida de mi ánima, que tiene mas de la, que le echo el de lo alto.
M. Pues Dios no le vino a echár agua, que sin agua lo crió.
P. Bien, no está v.m. en el quénsto, el de lo alto es su marido, que está en lo alto de la casa, y desde allí, écha agua en el vino, por una cebatana.
A. Con vos me entiérren Pedro que sábcs de cuenta.
M. Yo entendía que llamáva a Dios, el de lo alto.
A. En todas las cosas ay engáño.
P. Sino es en la ropa vieja.
V. Por cierto que tienen razón, que está ya el mundo muy perdido, por esto nos hémos recogido mi marido y yo a ésta vénca, por acabar en buena vida.

M. Esta llámáys buena vida huéspeda?
P. Si Señor, que peor era la de los de Sodómay Gomorrá.
V. No le paréce a v.m. que es buena vida estar hechos hermitaños en este disyerto, que mas hizieron los padres de el yermo?

P. Y

M. Let us see the wine that is so good.
H. The wine is such, that it is sufficient to bring a man to heauen that shall use to drinke it.
P. What now Mistresse, is it not ynowgh to be a keeper of an Inne, except you be an heretike too?
H. That which I say is true, and I will prooue it, that good wine carrieth men up to heauen.
M. How so?
H. Good wine makes good blood, good blood doth engender good condition, good condition doth ende in good works, good works carrie men to heauen.

M. She hath prooued her intent very suffi-
ciently.
A. But this cannot bee verified in this wine.
H. Why?
A. Because this seemes rather vineger and water.
H. Water, by the life of my soule, it hath no more water in it, then he from above put in it.
M. God never came to put water into wine, but without water he created it.
P. Well, you understand not the matter a right. He from above is his husband, which is in the top of the house, and from thence puts water into the wine with a long tunnell.
A. I will die and liue with thee Peter, for thos knowest fashions.
M. I understande that he had called God, him that was from above.
A. In every thing there is deceit.
P. Except it be in an old garment.
H. Truly they haue reason, for the worlde is very badde, for this cause haue my husbande and I withdrawen our selues into this Inne to make an end in good life.

M. Call you this a good life hostesse?
P. Yea sir, for that of Sodom and Gomorrá was worse.
H. Do you not thinke that it is a good life to be made Hermites in this deserte, what did the fathers in the wilderness more then this?

P. And

P. Ytan virtuosos, que de limosna, a quantos passan les quitan lo que llévan.
V. Quitar, nunca Dios tal quiera, recibir lo que nos dan con cortesía, esto si.
P. Es el cáliz, que llaman cortesía a la gançia, con que ábren las vi-
gaças.
V. El diablo trúxo a éste moço a mi casa, vete con todos los diablos, espíritu de contradicción.
P. * Mal me quieren mis comándres, por que les digo las verdádes.
M. Aóra Pedro, haze quenta con la huéspeda, y vamos de aquí, que es tarde.
P. Que se deve de todo huéspeda?
V. Espére, contaré, dos de paja, y de paja dos, tres de cébada, cinco de vino, vno de carne y dos de tocino, veynete reales entodo.
P. * Quenta hecha, mula muerta, escudro y os a pie, pues a mi me quíere dar papilla señora huéspeda, * no save, que quando ella nació, ya yo comía pan con cortecia: espere haré yo la mia.
V. Haze, veámos.
P. * Tres y dos son cinco, dos de blanco y tres de tinto, y otros tres de estópas y pez, vno de la ólla y dos de la cholla, y medio de la cébolla, ocho son en todos.
V. Malos años para vos, págame aquí, si no, por el siglo de mi padre que os araña ésta cara.
P. * Quitado se ha el gáto la rópa de la ypocrasía, señora hermitaña, tenga paciencia y no tan ta codicia.
V. * No me quente mortuórios, si no pagué me, si no, las bárbas le sacaré vna a vna.
M. Dale, lo que pidire, la huéspeda Pedro no riñas con ella.
P. En vna nao cargada de plata, no ay harto para contentárla.
V. No pido si no lo justo, paga me her-
máno

P. And so holie that of pure almes, of as many as passe they take away that they carie.
H. Take away, God forbid, receive that they give us with curtesie that we doe.
P. Thus it is, they call the picklocke curte-
sie, with which they open the mailes.
M. The diuell brought this seruant to my house, get thee hence in the duels name, shouf spirit of contradiction.
P. My gossips cannot abide me, because I speake truth unto them truly.
M. Now Peter reckon with the hostesse and let us begon hence, for it is late.
P. Hostesse what is owing in the whole?
H. Tare I little, I will reckon, two of straw, and of straw two, three of barley, fine of wine, one of flesh, and two of bacon, ten shillings in the whole.
P. The reckoning made, the mule dead, seruient man get your way a foote why the mistresse hostesse will give me pap, doth she not knowe, that when she was borne, then did I eat bread with hard crust, carrie ile make my reckoning.
H. Make it, let us see.
P. Three and two are five, two of sacking & three of wine somewhat blacke, and other three of the burdes of flaxe and pitch, one of the pot, and two of the * novelle, and a halfe of the * The binder chibbowle, they are eight in the part of the head whole.
H. Wher with a mischiefe to you, paie mee beere, if not, by my fathers soule ile put out thine eies.
P. The cat hath cast off the * garment of * The cat ha-
hypocrasie, mistris Hermite haue ning his selfe a
Hermite, put on patience, and be not so covetous.
and many beests
H. Do not reckon up mortuaries unto me, and creatures but paie me, if not I will pull off the came to her for baires of thy beard one by one.
M. Give that which the Hostesse doth re-
mice, which at last came the
P. In a ship loaden with siluer there is not stong off the
enough to content her.
H. I require nothng but my right, pay me to them.
n 1 brother

máno y dexate de palabras.

P. Así dize la picaza, tome señora ve
ay doce reales, los seis son de
bueno, y los seis de mal prové
cho le hagan.

V. Mas no, si no los seis, son de bien ve
nidos sean, y los seys de en óra
mala váys.

P. Maldiciones de putas viejas, ora
ciones son de salud.

M. Quédese con Dios Señora huéspeda.

V. El vaya con vuestras mercedes, a
qui está ésta pobre posada pa
ra todas las veces que vinieren
este camino, les suplico se sirvan
della.

* i. Their mo
ney.

P. Sobre buen haz de pájatia.

V. No, sino por sus ojos bellidos lo ha
rán.

P. Quede con dios tí, y el la haga bu
na hermitaña.

V. Anda con dios híjo, y el os haga me
jor de lo que soys.

Diálogo quinto, entre tres Pájes, lla
mados el uno Iuan, el otro Francisco, el
otro Guzman, en el qual se contienen,
las ordinarias pláticas que los pájes
suelen tener unos
con otros.

I. D E donde vienes Francisco?

F. De la corte Iuan.

I. Que ay por allá de nuevo?

F. El rollo se está adonde solía, el Rey
ha mandado que quien tuviere
que comér, que cóme, y el otro
que ayúne.

I. Viste a la Réyna?

F. A la de diamantes con que híze el
postrer flux.

I. Luego jugado has?

F. Yo no, mis dineros jugaron al tro
cado, y trocaron me por otro
dueño.

I. Ganaste o perdiste?

F. Gané

brother and leue of words.

P. So saith the * chattering Pie, holde mi
stres, see heere sixe bostlings, three
of them be much good doe it you
with them, and the other three the
diuell choake you with them.

H. Not so, but the one three are of wel
come unto me, and the other three
the diuell go with thee.

P. Curseing of old whoores are praiers of
health.

M. God be with you mi stres Hostesse.

H. God conduct your worships, heere is this
poore Inne, for as often as you shall
come this way, I entreat you to
use it at your command.

P. * Aunt you do it upon a good sheafe of
frame.

H. No, but onely for your faire looks sir.

P. Aunt God be with you, and make you a
good hermite.

H. Farewell sonne, and God make thee bet
ter then that thou art.

The fift Dialogue betweene three Pages,
called the one of them Iohn, the other
Frances, the other Guzman, wherein are
conteneined the ordinarie speeches
which pages are wont to haue
one with the other.

I. Rom whence come you Frances?

F. From the court Iohn.

I. What is the newes there?

F. The gallowes is where it was wont to be,
the king hath commanded that hee
that hath any thing to dinner, that
he eate it, and he that hath not that
be fast.

I. Haue you scene the Queene?

F. The Queene of Diamonds with which
I made the last flush.

I. Hast thou now beene at gaming?

F. Not I, my money plaid at exchange, and
changed me for another master.

I. Hast thou won or lost?

F. I

F. Gané y perdí.

I. Como pudo ser?

F. Perdi mis dineros, y gané escarmi
ento para no jugar más.

I. No sería perdida la del dinero, si tu
llevases adelante este propó
sito, pero yo digo, que quien
hizo, hará.

F. A lo menos mientras me durare el
Escozor, no jugaré más.

I. Este no te durare mas que hasta lle
gar de aquí a tu casa, o hasta
que tengas mas dineros.

F. Pues yo para que quiero el dinero,
tengo de comprár casas, o viñas
con ello.

I. Para embriá a tus parientes, o para
luzirte con ello.

F. Luzirme o que malos años, Lúz
game el puto de mi amo pues
le sirve de mi.

I. Pues piensas que te ha de durar tu
áno toda la vida?

F. Dure lo que durare, como cuchár
de pan, que quando éste me fal
te, no faltará otro tan ruyon co
mo el.

I. Y quando séas grande?

F. Estonces ya sabémos el paradó de
los pajes, o a la guerra, o a un
monasterio, o a la hórca.

I. Esto postrero lo le renuncio en ti.

F. Pues pensáis vos echa páros por ypó
crita?

I. Hermano, en mi lináje nunca tuvo
ningun ahorcado, no quiero
estrenáriyo.

F. Estrenada os darán la soga, no os
penséis por esto.

I. Piensa el ladrón que todós son de su
condición, yo hermano no pién
so hazer obras por donde la me
réfica.

F. Pues no as oydo dezir, que el pensár
no es sabér, esto fin pensar se
verná antes que vn colongia.

I. Yo bien c reo, que si yo trato mucho
contigo, que tu me procure
ás pegar la tija, porque vn
puerco

F. I have moon and I have lost.

I. How could that be?

F. I lost my money, and got a warning to
play no more.

I. The losse of money shold be no losse, if
thou didst go forward in this pur
pose, but I say, that he that bath
once plaided will play againe.

F. At the least, while the smarting shall
last I will play no more.

I. That will not last with thee longer, then
till thou commest home, or untill
thou hast more money.

F. What shold I doe with money, am I to
buy houses or vinyards with it?

I. To send it to thy friends and kinred, or
to make thy selfe trim with it.

F. To make my selfe trim ? a plague take
it, let the buggerer my master
trim me seeing he serues himselfe
of me.

I. Why thinkest thou thy master is to liue
with thee for ever?

F. Let him last as long as a spoone of bread,
when he is wanting to me, there
will not faile another as bad as
hee.

I. And when thou art better growen in
yeeres?

F. Then we know the end of Pages, either
to the warre, or to a monasterie, or
to the gallowes.

I. This last I leave to thee.

F. Why thinke you to scape because you are
an Hypocrite?

I. Brother, in my kinred never was there
any hanged, I will not hanself the
gallowes.

F. They will give you a halter for hanself,
take you no care for that.

I. Well thinkes the theefe, that all are as
himselfe, I brother do not thinke
to doe any thing that I may de
serue the gallowes.

F. But hast thou not heard saie, that opinion
is no knowledge, this without thin
king will come sooner then a ca
nonship.

I. I well beleuee, that if I deale much with
thee, thou wilt infect me with
mangines, for one hog that hath
swallowed

puerco encenagado, siempre procura encenagár a otro.

F. Dizes verdad, que si el ladrón anda con el hermitaño, o el ladrón será hermitaño, o el hermitaño ladrón, pero tu nunca juegas?

I. Yo no en mi vida.

F. Pues tente bien no cágas, porque a fece que si cás, que as de ser como los borrhachos que comienzan tarde a ser lo, que por esquitárselos de lo que han deixado de bevr, nunca salen de cucheros.

I. Si Dios me guarda mi júyzo, yo me guardará de ser vicio.

F. Mas fuerte era Tróya, y fue destruida.

I. Dexcemos ásso agóra, y díme como te va con tu año?

F. A mi muy bien, porque como es migo, galán, y enamorado, son tres cosas que fácan de harón al mas cuerdo, y así todo se nos va en fiestas, yna librea ey, étra mañana, siempre en faráces, músicas, y dánças, siempre en combites, que mal año para Lançarote quando de Bretaña víno, si éran bien tratado como nosotros.

I. Si peró a fece que créo, que tras buen bocádo, dais buen grito.

F. Porque dízes ésso?

I. Porque me parece que si vuestro amo dánça de la manera, volotros no avéys d'estár ociosos, sino que avéys de capatear, porque en casa del músico, todos los criados son danzantes.

F. Esverdád que elló a cofadillo, nos trae de dia con recaudos, y de noche con rondas, pero con el buen pescbre, todo se passa y no como tu que estás serviendo a vn pelón, que te deve matá de hambre.

I. No mata, porque yo nunca tuve vida, despues que estoy con el.

F. .No tiene buen ordinario?

I. La

wallowed in the mire will bery another.

F. Thou sayest true, for if a theefe keepe compaine with a hermit, either a theefe shall become a hermit, or a hermit a theefe, but dost thou never play?

I. I, neuer in my life.

F. Then bold fast, fall not, for in faith if thou fullest, thou art like to be as drunken men, which beginne at length so to be, which to quitt themselves of that they haue left to drinke, they neuer get out of drunkennes.

I. If God keepe me in my right minde, I wil keep my selfe from this vice.

F. Troy was more strong, and yet was ouercome.

I. Let vs leaue this now, and tell me how your master and you agree?

F. I like very well of him, for he is young, gallant, and in loue, they are three things which busie the wifest man, & so we are altogether in feastings, one iuyry to day, another to morrow, neuer without good cheere, musike, diances, and banquets, that the dinell take Lançarote when he came from Brittaine if he were so well entreated as we are.

I. Yea, but in faith I beleue that after a good morfyl, you paie well for it.

F. Whysaef thou so?

I. For I thinke, that if your master diance in such sort, you are not altogether idle, but that you foote it too, for in a musiques house all the seruants are dauncers.

F. It is true, that by reason of this loue small occasions drive us in the day time with letters, and in the night we round the street, but with good fare we passe ouer all this, and not as thou dost which seruest a miserable wretch, which killeth thee with hunger.

I. He kills me not, for I neuer had life since I came to him.

F. Hath he not a good ordinarie table?

I. Wretched-

I. La lazéria es ordinaria en casa.

F. Que os da a comér?

I. Esperanças y folias.

F. Con ésto estás tan gordo?

I. Delos Tovillos si estoy.

F. Dalle cantonada.

I. Temo de encontrar otro peór, y no querría por huýr de lallama dár en las brasas.

F. Haz te cuchillo de melonéro, provár muchos hasta hallár uno bueno.

I. Luégo cobra hombre mala fama, y le dízen Piédra movediza no la cobre móho, y todo el mundo le da del cobdo.

F. No fino deixáis secár como palo en fermentára.

I. Adonde vastu agóra?

F. A buscár mi ámo, y temo que no le tengo de podér hallár.

F. Adonde le perdiste?

I. Yo no le perdí, el se perdió inuchas dias ha.

I. Ansi yrá un perdido a buscár otro perdido, como un duelo busca otro duelo, y una necedad a otra, porque *Pares cum paribus facillime congregantur.*

F. Bendito sea Dios, que por tres blancas de gramática que studió, ya no se cabe en el cuérpo, y no vée la ora que desembuchárl lo.

I. Digo hermano que cada obcja con su pareja, y vn semijante busca a otro.

F. Ansi tu ámo como es miseráble pelón, busca vn ypócrita como tu, a quien con dézile que es mestér ayunár para yr al cielo, te tiene en diéta perpétua, y canoniza por virtud, lo que es miseria fina/

I. No tienes razón, que el no es avariento, peró como dízen Pobreza no es viléza.

F. No, mas es maestra que enseña como se ha de hazer.

I. Yo sé, que si mi ámo tuviére la rénta del

I. Wretchedesse it selfe is his ordinarie prouision in house.

F. What diet doth he gue you?

I. Hopes and songs.

F. And with this art thou so fat?

I. If I be fat, it is in my ankle bones.

F. Run away from him.

I. I am afraid so mette with a worse, and I would not leape out of the frying pan, and fall into the fire.

F. Make of thy selfe a knife to cut pumpions, prove many untill you finde one good.

I. Straightway a man gets an ill name, and they say a rolling stone gathereth no mosse, and enevy one isfleth him a side.

F. No but suffer your selfe to drie as stickes on a pile or beape.

I. Whither goest thou now?

F. To seeke my master, and I feare that I shall not finde him.

I. Where didst thou lose him?

F. I lost him not, he lost himselfe a great while agoe.

I. So one that is lost himselfe, goeth to seeke another that is lost, as one greefe seekes another greefe, and one folly another: for like will to like.

F. God be blessed, that for * three blanckes * A blancke of Grammatica which he hath stu- halfe a Mar- died, now he cannot keep it in his vedi, a Mara- bell, and he thinkes euerie hower vedi 34 of ten, till he bath vittered his whole pence.

I. I say brother, euerie sheepe with his er- quall, and like will to like.

F. So thy master as he is a miserable wretch seekes out an hypocrite like thy selfe, and by telling thee how requisite it is to fast for the winning of bea- uen doth holde thee in continuall diet, and extols that for a vertue, which is pure miserableness.

I. You fast not well, for he is not courteous, but as it is saide, Pouterie is not vilenes.

F. No, but it is a mistris which doth teach us how we shoud become rigardly.

I. I know, if my master bid renounes as thy master

del tuyo que gastará mas que el, lo qual el nos dice que hará muy complidamente si dios le mejora d'estado.

F. De manéra que éstas son las esperanças que coméis.

I. Mas vale que agua, como dezía la veja que mojáva el farniente en el río y le chupáva.

F. Con ésta comida no dudó dexéis de salir buenas girfáltas al caballo del año.

I. Si però, si bolamos tan alto, llevárnos ha el viento, como haze a todos los que se sueltan de semejante manjár.

F. Por vida de tu madre, que renta tie-ne tu ámo?

I. Yote lo diré vn quanto de mentiras, y otra de necesidades, y vn millón de necedades, y todo esto se gasta cada año, de fuerte, que viene a faltar a rata por can-tidád.

F. Quantos caballos tiene?

I. Dize que cinco con quattro que se le an muerto.

F. Quantos criados?

I. Nones son, y no llégan a tres.

F. De fuerte que tu solo le sirves.

<sup>* i. In going vp
and downe shif-
ting for my self,
and not living
on my master.</sup> I. Y aun me podrían açotar por vagamundo.

F. Pues como siendo sólo, no tiénes mucho en que entendér.

I. Sitengo, en contar lástimas y cala-midades.

F. Quando tiempo ha que bives con el?

I. Que muero con el muchos días ha.

F. Hermano hermáno, quien si inude

Dios te ayude.

I. Si, mas adonde yrá el buey que no are, por donde quiera veo cien leguas de mal camino.

F. Aquí viene Guzmanillo, veámos que nuevas trae, a Guzman que ay de nuevo?

G. Muchas cosas, el Turco (dizen que) se ha tornado Moro, que Venecia nada en agua, y que Ytalia está llena de hombres, que en Fráncia

master bath, that bee wold spend more then he doth, which bee tel-leth vs he will perorme with the best, if it please God to better his estate.

F. So then these bee the hopes which you feede on.

I. It is better then water, as the olde woman saide, which dipped a dry sticke in the riner and sucked it.

F. With this diet I doubt not but at the yeeres end you may proue good * Gerfalcions to flie.

I. Tea but if we flie so high, the wind will carie vs away, as it doth all those which do feede on such diet.

F. By the life of thy mother, what reuenerwe bath thy master?

I. I will tell thee, a thousand thousandes of lies, and another of needs, a million of foolerries, and all this is spent euery yeere in such sorte, that bee spends as much as comes in to him.

F. How many horses hath he?

I. He saith fise, with those fower which are dead.

F. How many seruants?

I. They are odde, and yet they mount nos to three.

F. So then thou alone seruest him.

I. And yet might they whip me for a vagabond.

F. How so, seeing thou art alone thou hast not much to imploy thy selfe on.

I. But I haue much to do to reckongreefes and calamities.

F. How long hast thou lued with him?

I. I haue beene dying with him long since.

F. Brother, brother, God wil him helpe, that seekes for it himselfe.

I. Tea, but where shall the oxe goe that he shall not labour, which way soever I see a hundred leagues of ill way.

F. Heere comes little Guzman, let vs see what newes bee brings. Hoe Guzman what newes?

G. Many things, the Turke (as they say) is become a Moore or infidell, * Venice swims in water, & Italie is full of people, and that in France there

cia ay mas de cien mil hombres de guerra, y tambien se dice de secretos que el conde de Flandes a dormido con la Reyna de España.

F. Todo esto ay de nuevo?

G. Aora vinieron con este corréo éstas nuécas.

F. De luengas vias luengas mentiras suelen venir.

G. Lo que yo os he dicho, todo estan verdád, como ser aora de dia.

F. Luego grandes guerras se aparcjan éste verano.

G. Los pronósticos dízen, que éste verano no los que bivieren, verán grandes maravillas.

F. Que maravillas serán, cuenta nos las.

G. Dízen que el sol será mayór que toda la tierra.

F. Santo Dios, y esto ha de ser verdád?

G. Y que la luna cada noche aparece de su manéra, que las estrellas fino fuesen por el sol no ternán resplandor ninguno, que los ríos corren a la mar, que arderán muchos montes, que avrá grande mortandad de todo género de ganados, y en todas las ciudades avrá unos monstruos que echáran llamas por la boca, y los hombres que no comieron lo que éstos vomitáren, morirán.

F. Valame Dios, yo pienso que todo ésto es mentira.

G. Los Pronósticos dízen, que el sol y la luna faltaran, antes que todas éstas cosas falten.

F. Dessa manéra, todos los hombres morirán, porque quien ha de comér lo que vomitáren los monstruos?

G. Pues as tu comido vn asno entero, y no comerás de aquello?

F. Siyo soy asno, yos soyis mula.

G. Yo que te estriego que largas le naciéron a v.m.

F. Tan largas como sus narizes.

G. Va a verá tu tía Hermáno?

F. No que ya ví a tu madre, en la pel-jeiría.

there are more then a hundred thousand men of armes, and also they say in secret, that the * Earle ^{The king of} of Flanders hath lien with the Queen in his title Earle of Flanders.

F. Is there all this newes?

G. These newes came now with this poste.

F. Farre fetched lies come from farre.

G. That which I haue told you is as true as it is now day light.

F. Then great warres are like to bee this sommer.

G. The Prognostications say, that shall bee this sommer (shall see great woonders).

F. What shall those woonders bee, I pray thee tell them vs.

G. They say the sun shall be bigger then all the earth.

F. Blessed God, and will this proove true?

G. And that the moone euery night doth <sup>i. Starres re-
appeare after his old fashion, that</sup> <sup>ceive their light
the * starres if it were not for the</sup> ^{of the sunne.} <sup>As sunne
sunne, shold haue no light, that all</sup> <sup>As sunne in Sici-
rius run into the sea, that manie lie and others
mountains shall burne, that there which continu-
shall be a great slaughter of all kind
of cattell, and in all cities there
shall be monsters which shall cast ^{* For mans}
* out fire at the mouth, and those meat to eat.
men which shal not eat that which ^{i. Queens wher-}
these monsters shall vomite, they brea-de.
die.</sup>

F. God helpe me, I think this to be a lie.

G. The Prognostications say that the sun and the moone shall faile of their courses rather then these things to faile.

F. By this meanes, all men shall die, for who ^{* Made a gull.} can eat that which these monsters ^{* Hoc, a voice} ^{that carters vs} shall vomit?

G. Why hast thou swallowed downe an * asse ^{to make their} horses stand still.

F. If I be an asse thou art a mule.

G. * Ho I do rub thee, for they are sprung ^{* i. Long eare,} ^{calling him} thereby asse.

F. So verie * long to your worship.

G. Go you to see your aunt brother?

F. Not so, for I saw thy mother in a brothel ^{* Calling of him} ^{which for the} most part haue long nofes.

lejería.

Ha qz Ral. G. Harrallame esse queso.
lame, then it is F. Harralláme esse asno.

Grate me, and G. Toda la vida has de comér sin plato?

Harrá allá

then it is bright

that may as one

affe.

affe.

G. O Dios te bendiga la bella alimaña.

F. O Dios te despache déste mundo

para el otro.

G. Dízen me que es v.m. gran come-

dor de huevos asados.

F. Tambien me han dicho a mi que v.

m. come muy bien bacalao.

G. Os todos los asños truxérán albar-

das, que buen oficio era el, de

los albarderos.

F. Si esto fuere así, una mas tenía de

costa vuestra ámo cada mes.

G. Si del nocio se uviéra de pagár alca-

vála, quanto ganarán los Alca-

valeros con v.m.?

F. En ésta hacienda nadie podría tra-

tár, porque dizque es patrimó-

nio de v.m.

G. Todo es de v.m. pedáçov.m.

F. Si, peró es de agujón para picára

v.m.

G. Mas no creó que es sino de atún de

yjáda.

F. Si de atún fuéra ya v.m. uviéra arre-

nietido a la pieça, como el af-

no a la cevada.

G. Parcé me hermano que aunque tu

entráste en la corte, nunca la

corte entró en ti.

F. En la de los púrcos concedo, por-

que como es tu juridición, no se

háze en ella, sino lo que tu or-

dénas.

G. Por vida tuya que me digas, quan-

tos curlos tienes de nocio.

F. Los mismos que vos de majadéro.

G. Yo pienfo, que éras ya doctor en

ynfensato.

F. Y vos estás graduado por cavalle-

ríza.

G. A Dios hermano, y roe bien éstos

grançones.

F. Y

house.

G. Grate me this cheese.

F. Haight that may this affe.

G. What art thou to eate thy meare all thy life without a platter?

F. Art thou to eate all thy life of goates flesh?

G. O God blesse thee faire beast.

F. O God rid thee out of this world into the other.

G. They tell me that you are a great eater of hard eggs.

F. Also they tell mee that you eate verie wellpoore John.

G. O if all affes shoulde carrie pack-saddles, what a good trade shoulde the pack-saddler haue.

F. If it were so, your master shoulde bee at the charge of one packe-saddle more every moneth.

G. If there shoulde bee subsidies gathered up of every foole, how much would the gatherers of the subsidies put into their purse with your wor-

ship?

F. In this goods none could meddle, bicausse it is saide it is your patrimonie.

G. All your worship is one peece.

F. Yea, but it is a prick to spurre you foreward.

G. But I beleue it not but that is a peece of a Tunnie fish of the bellie side.

F. If it were of a Tunnie fish you had set upon a peece of it as greedilie as an affe on the prouender.

G. It seemes to me brother, althoough thous entredst into the court, the cours never entred unto thee.

F. In that of hogs I graunt, for as it is thy jurisdiction, there is nothing done therein but that thous doest appoint.

G. I pray thee tell me how many degrees of a foole hast thou?

F. As many as thou hast of a ioulthead.

G. I thinke thou wast doctor in fencelessenes.

F. And you taken degree in the stuble.

G. Farewell brother, and gnew well these brukes.

F. And

F. Y rumiád vos como buen cabrón esfótrios.

I. Par diez, bueno te ha parado el amo.

F. Amigo ferá el de vna taça de vino.

I. Este es de los que aconcejáva el ósso, que hizicsemos poco caso.

F. Como es este quento?

I. Quenta yfópo, que vna vez dos amigos ván camino a pie, por vn monte, y falió a ellos vn ósso, el vno echando mano a su espada, se quiso defendér a siy a su compañero, al qual díxo que hizicse lo mismo, para que ni el vno ni el ótro muriesen, el compañero que tenía mas cuenta con su salud, que con el del otro, a trevióse ántes a sus pies, que a sus manos, y no curando del compañero, dio a huir a vn árbol alto que allí vido, y se subió en él, donde estuvo segúro del peligro. El compañero visto que el solo no se podía defendér del ósso, se deixó caer en tierra, haziéndo muéstras de que estuvo muerto, tenía el huélgó y no resollava mientras el ósso llegó y le oíó todo, las narizes y la boca, y los oydos, y pensando que estuvo muerto, le fue de allí, sin hazcile ningun daño. El que estuvo en el árbol, visto que el ósso era ydo, bajó del, y preguntó a su compañero, que era aquello que el ósso le avía dicho al oydo: El otro respondió, dezíame que con tan ruynes compañeros como vos, nunca hizicse camino otra vez.

F. Respondió muy discretamente, y si yo lo supiera ántes, uviéra le contado este quento a estofo mierda en palillo, que piensa que sabe mas que Bartulo ni Baldo.

I. Por cierto el túvo demasiada razón, amotéjarte de nocio pues effu-

F. And brouse you as a good be-goat these others.

I. By ten, thy friend hath brought thee to a good passe.

F. He will rather proue a friend to a cup of wine.

I. This is such a friend that the beare counsellé that we shoulde make but little reckoning of.

F. How is that tale?

I. Esopet tells, that on a time two friendes

trauelled a foote together, and going

by a wood, a beare came out to them, the one laying hand on his

svord meant to defend himselfe, and his companion whome he willed that he shoulde doe the like, that neither

one of them nor the other might not

miscarrie; his companion which

made more account of his owne

safetie then his fellowes, was more

holde upon his feete then upon his

bands, and not respecting his fellow,

betooke himselfe to fly to a high tree

which there be same, and climed up

the same, where he was safe from

the danger. His companion seeing

that alone he could not defend himselfe

from the beare, cast himselfe

downe on the ground, making shernes

that he was dead, he held his breath,

and did not once blowe while the

beare came and smelt him round, his

nose and his mouth, and his ears,

thinking he had been dead went his

way, without doing him any harme.

He that was in the tree, seeing that

the beare was gone, came downe the

tree, and asked his fellow what was

that that the beare had told him in

his eare: The other answered, he

told me that with such bad compa-

nions as your selfe I never shoulde

travell againé.

F. He answered verie well, and if I

had knowne it before, I would have

told this tale to this turd upon a

sticke, which thinkes bee knowes

more then Bartulus or Baldus.

I. Truly bee had to too much cause to

sciffe at thee for a foole, seeing thou

F. And brouse you as a good be-goat these others.

I. By ten, thy friend hath brought thee to a good passe.

F. He will rather proue a friend to a cup of wine.

I. This is such a friend that the beare counsellé that we shoulde make but little reckoning of.

F. How is that tale?

I. Esopet tells, that on a time two friendes

trauelled a foote together, and going

by a wood, a beare came out to them, the one laying hand on his

svord meant to defend himselfe, and his companion whome he willed that he shoulde doe the like, that neither

one of them nor the other might not

miscarrie; his companion which

made more account of his owne

safetie then his fellowes, was more

holde upon his feete then upon his

bands, and not respecting his fellow,

betooke himselfe to fly to a high tree

which there be same, and climed up

the same, where he was safe from

the danger. His companion seeing

that alone he could not defend himselfe

from the beare, cast himselfe

downe on the ground, making shernes

that he was dead, he held his breath,

and did not once blowe while the

beare came and smelt him round, his

nose and his mouth, and his ears,

thinking he had been dead went his

way, without doing him any harme.

He answered verie well, and if I

had knowne it before, I would have

told this tale to this turd upon a

sticke, which thinkes bee knowes

more then Bartulus or Baldus.

viste tan torpe que no entendiste sus pronósticos y adivinanzas.

F. Pues tu entiendes las mejoras.

I. Yo entiendo las como el las díxo.

F. Pues yo bien creo que entiendo Romançey, y el en Romance hablava que no en algaravia.

I. Pues quieres vér como debáxó del sayál ay al: y que aun que te hablo en español, es algaravia de allende para ti.

F. Ya lo desleo vér como es.

I. Pues lo primero que díxo que el Turco se ha tornado moro, es lo el de profesión y de ley, y sielo siempre: todos siguen la feña de Mahoma. Que Venecia náda en agua, es verdád que está fundada en la már, que Italia está llena de hombres, también es verdád como Ynglaterra lo está. También que en Francia, ay más de cien mil hombres de guerra, quien no lo sabe que quando el Rey quiera, podrá facár della mas de doscientos mil.

F. Todo ésto bien lo entiendo yo, pero lo de más, como se puede entender, que el conde de Flandes aya dormido con la Reyna despaña y no se anda el mundo en guerras.

I. Pues bobo no sábes tu, que el conde de flandes y el rey despaña es todo una propia persona.

F. Iuro a tal, que tiene razón, que no avía yo caydo en ello.

I. Pues lo demás que díze que el sol es mayor que toda la tierra, es muy gran verdád, según demonstraciones astrológicas, que yo con fabér poco te las pudiéra dár a entender, si uviéra lugár. Que la luna aparecerá cada noche de su manera, esto tu lo vées cada dia con sus crescentes y menguantes, nunca está una noche, como estuyo otra: pues que arderán muchos móntes, también es verdád, que ay en el mundo muchos que

Dialogues.

shou wert so dull that thou understandest not his prognostications and divinings.

F. Doesst thou then understand them better?

I. I understand them as he speake them?

F. But I beleue well that I understand Spanish, and he speake in Spanish and not in the Moores tong.

I. But wilt thou see, how under course attire is some wisedome, & althoug he speake Spanish it is the Moores tong to thee.

F. I desire to see how it is.

I. The first then that hee syde, that the Turke is become a Moore or an Infidell, he is so by his profession and law, and alwaies hath beeene: all follow the sect of Mahomet. That Venice doth swim in water, it is true, for it is built in the sea: that Italy is full of men, also it is true as England is: also that in France are more then a hundred thousand men of armes, who knowes it not, that when the king will, hee may drawe out thereof more then two hundred thousand.

F. All this I understand well, but the rest how is it to be understande, that the earle of Flunders bath beene with the Queen of Spaine, and the world not to be vp in armes.

I. Why foole doest not know, that the earle of Flunders and the king of Spaine is all one person.

F. I syweare by such a one, hee saith true that I did not light upon.

I. But therest, which he saith, that the sun is bigger then the whole earth, is very true, according to astrological demonstrations, which I am knowing but a little could easilie make thee understand, if there were time and place, that the moone will appeare as it was wont, that thou seest continually with her waxing and waning, she is never one night as she was the other night, then that many mountaines shall burne, also it is true, for there bee many

que llaman Bolcánes, como el de Sicilia, que siempre está ardiendo. Que morirá mucho ganado, quien lo ygnóra que lo han de matar los hombres para comér.

F. Todo ésto entiendo bien, pero aquello de aquéllos móntes, que echarán llamas por la boca, y que hémos de comér lo que ellos vomitáren, no puedo y pensar que ésta.

I. Esto es más fácil que éstotro, porque aquéllos móntes, son los hórnos adó se cueze el pan, que echan llamas, y por la boca vomitan el pán que comiémos.

F. Aora digo que tienes razón, y que yo estaba en bábia, y que puede vñ nécio con vna necesidad forjada en su imaginación dár en que entender a cien fabios.

I. Asli le a aconteció al poeta Oméro, que como con la vejcz estuviese ciégo y se anduviese pasleando por la orilla de la már, y oyó hablar a ciertos pescadores, que en aquel punto se estaban espulgando, y como les preguntásls que pesca hazían, ellos entendiendo por los piójos, respondieron los que tenímos buscámos y los que no tenemos hallámos, pues como el buen Oméro no viéssie lo que ellos hazian, y por esta causa no entendiese la Enigma, fue tanto lo que fatigó su imaginación y entendimientó, por entender la y alcançar el secreto dello, que fue bastante ésta pesadumbre a hazer le morir.

F. El lo hizo no como fabio, sino como muy gran nécio, en martirio por lo, que no podía alcançar.

I. Yo bien creo que no morirás tu desse acháque.

F. No hermano, que no párce y amimadre, y yo contento me con lo que buenamente y sin mucho trabajo

Dialogues.

many in the worlde, as mount Aetna in Sicilie, which alwaies burnes, &c. that there shall bee a great slaughter of cattell who is ignorant thereof, for men are to kill them for to eate them.

F. All this I understande well, but that of those monstres, which shall cast our flames out of their mouthes, and that we shall eate of that they shall vomite, I cannot think what it may be.

I. This is more easie then the other, for those monstres are ouens, where they bake bread which cast out fire, and by the mouth of it, it vomitheth the bread which we eate.

F. Now I say you say true, and that I was in foolerie, and that a foole with his foolishnes framed in his owne imagination may giue to a hundred wise men matter to picke out.

I. So it happened to the Poet Homer, that as he was with age blinde and went walking by the sea shoare, and bearded certaine fishermen talking, that at that time were a losing themselves, & as he asked them, what fish they caught, they understanding that he had meant their lice, they answere, those that we * haue, we seeke for, * i. Haue in and those that we * haue not we find, their clothes, i. but as the good Homer, could not see lice, * i. Haue not in what they did, and for this cause hand. could not understand the riddle, it did so greeue his understanding to obtaine the secret of this matter, which was a sufficient greefe to cause his death.

F. He did that not as a wise man, but as a very great foole, in casting awaie himselfe for that he coulde not reach unto.

I. I well beleue ihou wouldest not die for such a matter.

F. No brother, for my mother is past childe bearing, and I content my selfe with that I may well and without much

trabajo puedo alcanzár.
I. Pues quien no es mas de otro, no merece mas que ótro, y quien no fave no vale, y quien ruy n es en su villa, ruy n es en Sevilla, y quien en adelante no mira atras le hál la.

F. Yo hermano, quiero andár por donde el buey, y asentár el pie llano, no tomar de las cósas mas de aquello que me dieron, y porque quiero del mundo gozar, quiero oír, y véry callár.

Diálogo sexto, que passó entre dos amigos Ingleses y dos Españoles, que se juntaron en la lónja de Léndres, en el qual se trataron muchas cósas curiosas y de gusto, son los Ingleses Egídio y Guillermo, los Españoles Diego y Alonso.

E. Ve hazcís Guillermo?
G. Ya lo veis Exidio.
E. Como estás tan ojiso?
G. ✽ Quien me conduxit.
E. Pues yo os conbido aun rato de buena conversación.
G. Adónde?
E. Venid os comigo, no yréis adonde yo os llevaré.
G. Si me lo dezís primero, por que yr hombre, sin favér adonde, sería negedad.
E. Luego no hazcís confiança de mi?
G. Si hago, mas no sabcís que no todos los umores son unos, y que podrá ser, lo que a vos os da gusto, enfadár me a mi.
E. Si, peró yo conózco ya vuestro umor, y me acomodo con el.
G. Con todo ésto, dezidme adonde me lleváys.
E. Vámos a la lónja, adonde me están esperando dos amigos Españoles, muy discretos, guitarcís de su buena conversación.
G. Háblan

much labour reacb unto.
I. But bee that is not more iben another doth deferue no more then another, and bee that hath not knowledge, is of no woorth, and he that in his owne towne is vile, and is also bad and naught in Seville, and he that looks not before he leape may fall into the ditch.
F. Brother, I will go where the axe hath troden, and set downe my foote softe and faire, not to take more matters then that they shall giveme, and because I will live in rest I will heare and see and hold my peace.

The sixth Dialogue which passed between two friendes Englishmen, and two Spaniards, which met upon the Exchange in London: wherein are handled many curiosities, and delightful: the English men are named Giles and William, the Spaniardes James and Alonso.

G. Ve hazcís Guillermo?
W. You even see Giles.
G. Why are you so idle?
W. Because no man hath hired me.
G. Then I invite you for a while into good companie?
W. Whither?
G. Come with me, will you not go whither I shall leade you?
W. If you tell me first, for it were follie for a man to go bee knowes not whither.
G. Do you not now trust me?
W. Yes I do trust you, but do you not knowe, that all humours are not one, and it may be, that which likes you may very much displease me.
G. Tea, but I know your humour, and I do apply my selfe unto it.
W. But for all this, tell me whither you care me.
G. Let us goe to the Exchange where two Spaniards very discrete men my friends are tarrying for me, you shall haue a taste of their good conversation.
W. Speake

G. Háblanyngles?
E. Vn poquito, pero pues vos enten- déis bien el Español, y yo tan- bien no ympórtá.
G. Huelgo me de yr, aunque no téa, mas de por aprender algunas buenas frásis Españolas.
E. Ellas sé yo que las tiénen buenas, porque son de Toledo donde es la prima de la lengua E- pañola.
G. Son por ventura aquéllos, que se ándan alli paseando.
E. Los propios, vámoss allá, Dios guarda a vuestras mercedes.
D. Y venga con vuestras mercedes.
E. Pase adelante la conversación de que se tratáva aóra.
D. No parezco sino que la entendáis, que respondísteis a ella sin daros el pie.
A. Tratávamos de las salutaciones, que se usan en Inglaterra, y de las que se usan en Espáña.
G. Quales son mejoras?
A. Ciento en esto, adonde quiera, ay abusos, quando dice el español Dios os guarde, en ora buena estýs, Dios os de salud, y el Ingles buenas tardes y otras se- mejantes yo apruevola por buena salutación.
G. Pues el mundo la repreúa, y tie- nen por tóscos a los que la usan.
A. Y aun por ésto se dice, que anda el mundo a el rebéz, y no ay me- jor señal de que ello es bueno, de vér que el mundo lo repro- éba.
G. De las demás salutaciones que os parece?
A. De las de mas digo, que quando el Ingles pregunta a el ótro, como estás, dice una gran nece- dad, y quando el Español dice bésos las manos, dice una gran mentira.
G. Menester es que déys razón, de vuestra nueva opinión.
A. Aóra dezimé por vuestra vida, no os parece negedad a el que vos veys bueno preguntar le como estás.
G. Teneys

W. Speak they English?
G. A very little, but seeing you understand well the Spanish and I also, it makes no matter.
W. I am glad to goe, though it be but to learne some good Spanish phrases.
G. Those I knowe they haue and good ones, because they are of Toledo where is the prime of the Spanish tong.
W. They are peradventure those which goe there walking.
G. The very same, let us goe meete them, God save your worships.
I. And welcome in Gods name.
G. Proceede in that conference which paf- sed betwixt you.
I. It seemes that you understand it, that you made answere to it without gi- * As in plai- sing "you like me."
A. We entreated of the salutations which one takes the last word of are used in England, and of those another speech, which are used in Spaine. and by that knows when to speake.
W. Which are better?
A. Truly in that matter, there are abuses on both parts, when the Spaniard saith God keep you, a good houre haue you, God give you health: and the Englishman God den, or good even, and the other like, I al- low it for good salutation.
W. But generally it is disallowed, and they hold them rude that use it.
A. And therefore it is saide, the world goes quite contrarie, and there is no better signe that it is good, then to see it disallowed in the world.
W. And of the other salutations what think you?
A. Of she rest I saie, that when the Englishman doth aske the other, how * he doth, he utters his owne sim- The Spaniard plisitie, and when the Spaniard alloweth not saith, I kisse your handes, bee tel- how do you, but leb a great lie.
W. You must give a reason of your newe opi- * worship or ma- nion.
A. Now tell me I pray you, doth it not seeme unto you a simplicitie, to aske a man whom you see well, how he doth?
G. You

G. Tencys razón, però podría tener algun mal secreto que no se le eche de ver.
 A. Estóncs que remedias vos, con preguntarle como estás, No fiera mejor, rogá a Dios, que le de salud, como haze el otro.
 G. Aóra dezidlo de el Español.
 A. El Español digo, que dizé mas mentiras entre aíno en este caso, que reales da por Dios, porque dezir a el que encuentra, vñlo las manos a v. m. si habla de presente, bien venes, que miente, pues no se las beña, si de futuro tambien porque bien fabemos, que quando el otro quisiese dar le las por muy amigo que fuese no se las querria el verar.

G. Si però parece que es vna manera de reconocimiento de superioridad a el que dice.

A. Así es, pero si se reconosimient no estás mas que en la lengua por que el refran dice, manos baza hombre que querria ver cortadas.

G. Yo os dire lo que subcedio al propó-
sito, a vn cavallero viejo español, con otro moço y fue, que como el moço por buena crianza, le dixo a el viejo suplico a v. m. de las manos, que se las querio besar el viejo confiado en su ancianía, las alargó para que se las besase, el otro ya arrepentido se las asió con las suyas y con muy buen do-
nare le dixo señor yo y v. m. a otros dos.

G. El moço andubo discreto en hazer lo así, y el viejo necio, porque bien favemos, que palabras de buena crianza no obligan.

D. Así es verdad, que esa ceremonia de besárla la mano, sólo la deve el vasallo a el señor.

A. Esta sola salua guarda tiene nuestra costumbre

G. You saie well, but be may haue some inward grieve, which appeereth not outwardely.
 A. Then what remedie do you give him in asking him how he doth, were it not better to pray to God to send him helpe as the other doth.
 W. Now tell that of the Spaniard.
 A. The Spaniard I say in this case telleth more lies within the yeere, then he giveth sixpences for God's sake, for to say to one, that he meeteþ I kisse the handes of your worship, if he speake of the time present, we well see that he lieth seeing he doth not kisse them: if of the time to come, in like manner; for we well know when the other would give him his handes to kisse, if he were never so great a friend, yet he would not kisse them.
 W. Yet but it seemeth that it is a manner of acknowledging of superioritie to him, to whom it is spoken.
 A. So it is, but this acknowledging is no more, but in the tong: for the pro-
verb be saith, A man kissthes those handes that he would see cut off.
 I. I will tell you that which happened sic for this matter, to an auncient gentleman, a Spaniard, with another young man; and it was, as the young man for manners sake said to the old man, I entreate your worship that you will give me your hands, for I will kisse them: the olde man presuming upon his yeres, put them out that he might kisse them, the other repenteing, toke him fast by the handes with his owne handes, and with very good pleasantnes, said unto him, Sir, I and your worship agaist other two.

W. The young man was wise in so doing, and the olde man simple, for well we knowe that wordes of compliment binden not.

I. It is true, this ceremonie of kissing the hand onely the vassall oþereth unto his Lord.

A. This safegard hath our custome, that with

costumbre que con dezir, beso a v. m. las manos, parece que es dezir, reconosco a v. m. por mi Señor, y yo por vuestro vasallo.
 E. Y que os parece de ésta costumbre, que tenemos enynglaterra de asir nos las manos vnos otros?
 A. Dos manos asidas, siempre fue simbolo de amistad, pero dár los tirones, que aqui se dán vno a otro, tengo lo por poca gravidad, y no sé si diga por lirvandad.
 E. Antes parece que aquello es por mas confirmación de la amistad.
 A. Esta confirmación ha de ser con obras, y no con ademánes ni tirones, quanto mas que deve avér muchos que con la mano asida y tirando, le devan de estar con el corazón matando le.
 G. Que dizis de la otra de besar los hombres a las mugeres publicamente.
 A. Esta costumbre tuvo su principio en Roma, en el tiempo que ella floreçia, aunque se ynvenció a diferente propósito de el que aóra se usa.

G. A que fin la ynbentaron?

A. Los Romanos aboreçian tanto el vino en las mugeres, que tenian ley, en que condenava a muerte ala que lo beviá, y porque no lo pudiesen hazer alcondidamente, tenian licéncia sus parientes de besar la, para que por el olfato conoçiesen, si lo avia bevido.

G. Si aóra se vbiessen de matar todas las que lo beven, yo veo que quedáramos sin mugeres.

E. No creeo, que fuera muy gran perdida, segun nos son causa de males.

G. Yo para mi tengo, que la mayor causa de la defolucion en algunas mugeres de Inglaterra es esta costumbre de besalos en publico, por que con ésto pierden la

51
 with saying, I kisse the bands of your worship, it seemes it is to saye, I acknowledge your worship for my lord, and my selfe for your vassall.
 G. And what is your opinion of this custome, which wee haue in England to shake hands one with another?
 A. Two handes fastened together, alwaies hath bee[n] a token of friendship, but to shake and plucke them, as here they do one to another, I hold it for small gravitie, and I knowe not whether I may call it lightnes.
 G. Rather it seemeth that it is for the greater confirmation of friendship.
 A. This confirmation ought to bee with workes, and not with gestures, nor shaking of the hands, and so much the rather, because there are many which with hand in hand shake bands, and so bare would kill each other.
 W. What say you of that custome of kissing between men and women and that openly?
 A. This custome first began in Rome, in the time it most flourished, although it were invented for a different purpose, then it is now used.
 W. For what purpose was it invented?
 A. The Romanes did so much detest wine in women, that they had a law, in which they did condemne to death that woman which did drinke wine, and because they might not drinke it without being knowne, their kinsfolkes had leaue to kisse the women, that they might knowe by their breath whether they had dronke wine or no.
 W. If nowe they shold kill all those women which drinke wine, I see we shold be quite without women.
 G. I beleue that it were not any great losse, seeing they are cause of many enuis unto us.
 W. I holde that the greatest cause of dis-
solute[n]es in some women in Eng-
land is this custome of kissing pub-
licly, for that by this means they

la vergüenza y a el tocamiento del belfo, les entra vn veneno que las ynficiona.

A. Antes que se yntroduxéssse ésta costumbre en Roma, cuenta Tito Lívio, que desterraron de ella a vn senador, persona de mucha quénica, sólo por que belfo a su mugér delante de vna hija suya

G. De vn extremo viniéron a dár en otro extremo.

E. En España no se vfa besár los hombres a las mugéres.

D. Si besan los maridós a sus mugéres, y esto allá detrás de siete paredes, donde aun la luz no los puéda vér.

G. Es por que los Españóles sen demasidamente celozos.

A. No, si no, per que sómos tan tristes, que no hémos meneñer éste apetito, para hazér mil malos recaudos que fería si tubiessemos esse Ocaçión.

G. Yo créo, que antes caufaría hastío, y no andarián los hombres, tan golosos, por que vedamiento es causa del aperito.

A. No es fuego el de la concupiscencia, que se ahoga por echarle mucha materia, antes es como la ydrospeña, que mientras mas el enfermo beue mas sed tiene.

D. Especialmente entre los Españóles que por sér de complección coléricos, está *Venus* en su punto.

G. Yo entiendo ésto al contrario, por que *Venus* consiste mas en vinedad que en calor, por lo qual entiendo que mas aptos son para semejante exercicio los vinedos de complección, que los coléricos que con de su naturaléza sécos.

A. Si peró la humidad sin calor, sería como la tierra sin el sol, que no es suficiente de misina a producir cosa algúna.

D. Por ése, los poetas, casaron a *Venus* con Bulcán Dio de el fuégo.

E. Mas Bulcán ni *Venus* sin Ceres y Baco

lose their shamefastnes, and at the very touch of the kisse, there entreth into them a poison which doth infect them.

A. *Before this custome was brought into Rome, Titus Livius tellereth that they banished out of the citie a senator, a person of great account, onely because he kissted his wife before one of his owne daughters.*

W. *They fell from one extremitie into another.*

G. *In Spaine do not men use to kisse women?*

I. *Yes the husbands kisse their wiues, but as if it were behinde seuen walles, where the very light cannot see them.*

W. *It is because the Spaniards are too idolatrous.*

A. *No not so, but because we are so wanton, that we neede nothing to helpe our appetite, to make a thousand ill matches which would fall out if we should haue this occasion.*

G. *I do rather beleue, that it would cause satietie, and that men would not seeke it so greedily, because forbidding is cause of desire.*

A. *The fire of concupiscence, is not such as is extinguished by casting on much matter, but like the dropsie, that the more the sick person drinkest the more thirst still he hath.*

I. *Especially among Spaniards, which are of a cholericke complexion, Venus is in her full force.*

G. *I take that quite contrarie, because Venus doth more in moisture then in heat, whereby it seemes to me that the moist of complexion are more apt to such matters, then the cholericke which are by nature drye.*

A. *Tea but moisture without heat, would be as the earth without the sunne, which is not sufficient of it selfe to bring forth any thing.*

I. *For this cause the Poets married Venus with Vulcan God of fire.*

G. *But neither Venus nor Vulcan, without Ceres*

G. Pues yo para mi tengo, que en las tierras mas frías, está mas reconcentrado el calor natural, y por ésto con mayor apetitú, en los que biven en las tales regiones.

A. No es éste calor reconcentrado que está en el corazón el que es causa de este fuégo, sino el que está en la sangre y partes exteriores.

G. Si peró no me negareis, que el calor de la sangre no procede de el, de el higado.

A. Así es verdád, pero no obra éste efecto en su origen y fuente, si no quando se ha derriamado por las venas, y como la virtud esparcida, es mas flaca que quando está viñida, si quando lo está es acometido el calor de su contrario el frío, y ésto confuérca y veleñencia vénfe y resfria de fuerte que no puede obrar ni hazer su efecto.

D. Así es, y la esperiencia de ésto se vé en los cabrónes, que esanímá luxuriosíssimo, y en llevando le a tierras frías, o no puede bivir, o pierde mucho de su potencia.

G. Los Faunos o semicápras, que los antiguos llamávan medios dióses cuentan los autóres y poetas, que éran en extremo luxuriosos.

E. Es verdád, que tuvo o ay tales hombres en en mundo llamados faunos.

A. En la vida de Sant Pablo primer hermitaño se quenta, que en aquél desierto donde el hazia su penitencia, la hazia tambien santo Antonio, el qual cono por revelacion supiéste como estaba allí cerca san Pablo, le fue avizirar y en el camino encontro con uno, el qual de la cintura para arriba, tenía forma perfecta de hombre, salvo que la cabeza tenia llena de cornue-

*Ceres and Bacchus are worth a * Caco, a fruit in the Indies or a small piece of money there.*

But I for my part thinke, that in countries most cold, the natural heat is more united in his center, and therefore is there greater desire in those that live in those countries.

A. *It is not that heate, which is settled about the heart, which is the cause of this fire, but that which is in the blood and exterior parts.*

W. *Tea but you will not denie, but that the heate of the blood doth proceede from the heate of the liver.*

A. *It is true, but it doth not worke this effect in the origmall and fountaine, except when it bath spredit selfe by all the vaines, and as the vertue dispersed is more feeble then when it is united; so when it is so, the heate is set upon by his contrarie the colde, and this cold with force and veleñencia doth ouercome and coole in such manner, that it cannot worke his effect.*

So it is, and the experience of this is seene in great bee-goats, which is a most luxurios beast, and in carrying him to cold countries, either he cannot live, or he loseth much of his naturall strength.

W. *The Faunes or halfe goates which the auncient writers called halfe gods, authors and poets tell that they were wonderfullly luxurios.*

G. *Is it true, that there were and are such men in the world called Faunes?*

A. *In the life of saint Paul the first Hermit, they say, that in that desart where he made his repentance, Saint Antonie likewise made his, who by revelation knowing he was neare Saint Paul, went to visit him, and in the way met with one, which from the girdle upward had the perfect forme of a man, except that he had his head full of little horns, & from the*

corneuelos pequeños, y de mediodía para abajo era cabrón con muy largas vedijas, y pies de lo más fino.

E. Hablava alguna cosa?

A. Si que el santo le habló, y le preguntó quien era y el en un lenguaje muy bárbaro, pero tal que el santo le pudo entender, le respondió, que era uno de los invitadores de aquél desierto, a quien la ciega gentilidad adoraba por diócesis, pero que eran criaturas mortales, y díxos mas a el fanto, que su grey y gente le enbiáva a el por embajador a rogarle a el al Santo, que róga se por todos a el comun Dios de todas las gentes, que bien favían que avía bajado de el cielo y hecho se hombre por redimir a los hombres, y con esto se fue por aquél desierto, con tanta ligereza que en muy breve espacio, le perdió de vista el santo.

D. Yo he leydo tanbien, que a el emperador Constantino magno, le traxeron de estos desiertos, otro bivo, y lo estubo muchos dias, y despues de muerto salado, le traxeron por muchas partes de el mundo, para que todos le biesen.

G. Boliéndo a nuestra primera plática, que os parece de esta ciudad de Londres?

A. A mi me parece, en verano tienda, y en invierno contienda.

G. Como se entiende ésto?

A. Digo que parece, en verano tienda, porque en aquél tiempo, todos los Señores, caballeros, y hidalgos, se salen fuera de ella, y se van a sus aldeas a passar el verano, quedando en ella solos los oficiales con sus tiendas abiertas.

G. Y por que lo de mas?

A. En invierno son los términos, como acuden de todo el reyno a ella

the middle downward he was a be-goate with very long bagge haire, and feete of the same.

G. Spake he any thing?

A. *Tea for Saint Anthonte spake unto him, and asked him who he was, and he in a language verie barbarous, yet notwithstanding such a language that the holy man could understand, he answered him, that he was one of the inhabitants of that desert, whom the blinde Gentiles worshipped for Gods, but that they were mortall creatures, and saide moreover to the Saint, that his people & nation sent him to him for an ambassadour to entreat the holy man, that he should pray for all of them, to the common God of all nations, for wel they knew, that he was come down from heauen, and being made man to redeme mankind, and herewithall he went shorow the desert with such swiftnes, that in shor space the holy man lost the sight of him.*

I. *Also have I read, that they brought to the Emperor Constantine the great, out of these deserts, another alive, & there he was many daies, and afterward being dead and salted, they carried him shorow many parts of the world, that all men might see him.*

W. Turning to our first speech, what do you thinke of the citie of London?

A. It seemes to me in sommer a shop, and in winter a contention.

W. How is this to be understood?

A. I say it seemes in sommer a shop, for that in that time, all the noble men, knights, and gentlemen, do goe out of the citie, and they goe to countrey villages to passe ouer the sommer, onely artificers remaining in it, with their shoppes open.

W. And why the other?

A. In winter are the termes, and out of euerie place of the kingdom, they come

ella a sus plítos está, hecha toda contienda o plíto, pero vltra de esto es vna de las mejores ciudades de el mundo a lo que yo entiendo.

G. Que dezís de toda la tierra en general?

A. Que es fertilissima y abundante, de todas las cosas que ella prodúze, especialmente de ganados, déven de ser los mas gruesos y mejorados de el mundo.

G. Y tambien de semillas es muy fértil.

A. Ansi es verdád, pero como no puede avér cosa perfecta en este mundo, ya que en esto es abundante, le faltan otras cosas necesarias, a la vida umana, que ella por la fraldad de sus tierras, no puede produzir, y ansi tiene necesidad, de comunicación con otros reinos.

G. Que cosas son esas, que dezís que le faltan, que yo creó que no hay cosa en el mundo, que en ella no se halle.

A. Es así verdád, pero es comunicado de otros reynos, que bien véys vos, que en ella no se cría oro ni pláta, no se coje vino, ni azúcar, ni açúcar, seda, especiería, ni frutas de las regaladas, como son cídras, limones, límias, naranjas, granadas, alméndras, y otros mil géneros de ellas, muy necesarios para el regalo de las gentes, y como digo de éstas pocas cosas, pudiéra dezir de otras muchas que déxo.

G. Si, pero tenemos otras, que sirven en lugar de esas cosas, y ansi no las echamos menos, como cervaza por vino, manteca por azúcar, y otras semejantes.

A. Con todo ésto, sería imposible poder passar éste reyno sin comunicación con otro, lo que no tiene España, que sola entre todas las provincias de el mundo, podría passar sin comunicación con otra, por produzir, dentro de si

to it to their pleadings, and so it is made nothing but contention and wrangling in lawe, but besides this it is one of the best cities in the world as farre as I perceiue.

W. What say you of the whole land ingeneral?

A. That it is most fruitfull, and abounding of all things, which it doth bring forth, especially flocks of sheep, which are the greatest and best of the world.

W. And also of seedes it is very fertill. A. It is very true, but as there cannot be any thing perfect in this worlde, so although in this it abounds, yet other necessarie things are wanting in it, which are required to humane life, which thorow the coldnes of the situation, it cannot bring forth, and so it hath neede of commerce with other nations.

W. What things are those which you saie, that are wanting in it, for I beleue that there is not anie thing in the world that in it is not found.

A. It is true, but it is brought from other countries, for well you see that in it, neither groweth gold nor siluer, nor wine, oyle, sugar, silk, spice nor fruits of the finesse sorte, as are citrons, lymons, oranges, pomegranats, almonds, & a thousand other kindes of them, verie necessarie for the deynie feeding of men, & as I speake of these fewe things, I could say of many others which I leue.

W. Tea but wee haue others, which serue in stead of these things, & so we want them not, as beere for wine, butter for oyle, & others the like.

A. Notwithstanding all this, it were impossible this kingdome could endure without commerce with others, which Spaine standeth in no neede of, for that alone among all the countries in the world might endure without communicating with any

Diálogos.

todas las cosas necessarias, a la vida vñána.

G. Pues, bien os podré yo dezir vna cosa, que España no produce.

A. Qual es?

G. Especiería, que al fin lo tráis de la yndia.

A. Tenéis razón, que ésta sólo le falta a España, pero, como vos dixiste, tambien se cría en ella, con que se podría suplir ésta falta.

G. Que es?

A. En lugar de pimienta, se cría vna yérva que llamámos pimienta, cuya simiente es de tanta fuerza, y de el propio efecto que la pimienta, que viene de yndias, en lugar de clavos, vñan muchos de los ajos, y si no fuese por vn mal olorillo que tienen, son mas fabrós que esfórtos, de aquafán gran cantidad se coje en España, genixbre de pocos dias aca, se a començado a plantar en ella, y se da bien.

G. A loméños no me negareis, ser mas fértil tierra en general Inglaterra que España.

A. Digo que es verdad, y lo conçedo, pero tambien os lo dezir, que de ésta fertilidad, viene la flojedad en las carnes, y mantenimientos de ella, que son de poco nutrimento y sustancia, y ésta es la causa, de que los yngleses nos notáys a los Espanoles por miserables en el comer, por que las carnes de España, son de tierra mas estéril, son de tanto nutrimento que si comiéssse de ellas vn hombre tanto como en ynglaterra come, sin dúbda ninguna, reventaría.

D. Por ésto, ay una manéria de dezir, comun en España, tu padre & cenó carnéiro asado, y acostóse, y murió se pues, no preguntes, de que murió.

A. En la propia España tenemos la isperiencia de ésto que la Andaluzia que es tierra mas fértil que

Diálogos.

any other countrey, bringing foorth within it self all those necessarie things for mans life.

W. But well may I tell you one thing which Spaine affords not.

A. What is it?

W. Spice, which you fetch from the Indies.

A. You say true, for Spaine onely wants this, but as you haue said also, there growes in it that which may supply this want.

W. What is it?

A. In steede of pepper there growes an herbe which we call pepper herbe, whose seede is of such strenght, and of the very same effect the pepper is which comes from the Indies. In steede of cloves, many vse garlick, and if it were not for a little ill smell which it hath, they are more fauorie then the other. Great quantite of saffron is had in Spaine. Ginger not long since is begun to bee planted therein, and it prospereth well.

W. At least you will not denie me, England generally to be a more fertile countrey then Spaine.

A. I say it is true, and I doe graunt it, but also I can tell you that of this fertilitie procedes the faintnesse of the flesh there, and the substance of it, which is of small nourishment and sustenance, and this is the cause why the English men doe marke the Spaniards for pinching in their diet, for that the flesh of Spaine as of a countrey more barren, is of such nourishment, that if a man should eat of it so much as in England they eat, without doubt he should burst.

I. For this cause there is a common saying in Spaine, thy father sapp'd with mutton rosted, and went to bed and died, do not now aske whereof he died.

A. In Spain we haue the experience of this, that in Andeluzai which is a country more fertile then * Eſtre-madura

Diálogos.

que Estremadura, las carnes de ella, no son con mucho de tanto nutrimento, ni tan buen savor, como estas otras.

E. Tambien se veé ésto en los yngleses, que van a España, que dízen que no pueden comér tanta carne allí, como comían áca.

G. Deczina a ora, que os paréce, de el trato de nuestra gente?

A. Generalmente hablando, toda la gente ynglesa, es benina, y amorosa, afable, alegre, y amigos de regozijos y fiestas, aficionados de toda melancolia, como a aquellos, en quien predominá el humor fanguino, pero fuera de ésto, he notado en todos en general tan ynfatiable avaricia, que desdóra todas sus virtudes.

G. Y de las mugeres que dezis?

A. Las mugeres generalmente hablán do, piéñlo que son las mas hermosas del mundo, por que tienen todas tres grácias particulares, para serlo, que son en extremo blancas, coloradas, y rubias, y la que con éstas grácias que son generales a todas, acíerta a tener buenas faiciones, es acabada en hermosura; pero tambien os digo con la misma generalidad, que tienen tres faltas.

G. Quales son por vida vuestra?

A. No las quisiéra dezir, por no caér en desgracia con ellas.

G. Yo falso por fiador que no caíreis.

A. * Teneis razón, que quien nunca subió, no puede caer, pero las tres faltas son, pequeños ojos, grandes bocas, no buena tez en los rostros, y de esto es la causa el ayre tan frio y futil, que corre en éstas partes, que se les círte y por esto es buena la yñbinción la de las mas carillas, aunque yo entiendo que no deve de bañárt.

G. Vos lo aveys diñputado muy bien, y yo os quédó muy aficionado servidör, y assi os suplico, que el tiempo que estubieredes en esta tierra os sirváis de mi.

A. Yo

Diálogos.

madura, the flesh is not by oddes of such nourishment nor of so good taste as that of Estremadura.

G. Also it may bee seen in Englishmen, which go into Spaine, which saie that they cannot eat so much flesh there, as they did eat heere.

W. Tell me now, what you think of the English manner?

A. Speaking generally, at the English people are courteous and louing, affable, and merrie, and louers of sportes and feastes, free from all melancholie, as those in whom doth predominate the sanguine complexion: but besides this I haue noted in general, such an infatiable covetousnes, as doth deface all their vertues.

W. And what say you of the women?

A. The women generally, I thinke they are the most faire of the world, for they haue all the three speciall graces which make the so, they are wonderfullly white & red, & that with these graces which are general to all, there happeneth for them to haue such good fauour, whereby they are most beautifull: but also I tell you with the same generalitie, that they haue three faults.

W. I pray you what are they?

A. I would not willingly tell them least I fall into disgrace with them.

W. I will be your suretie you shall not.

A. You say true, be that never gan up, can never fall, but the three wants are little eyes, great mouths, and vey smooth skinne in the face, and heire of the cause is for that the aire is so colde and subill in these parts, which doth tan them, and therefore maskes were well inuened, although as I perceiue they helpe not.

W. You haue disputed very well, and I remaine your affectionate servient, and so I entreat you that the time you are in this countrey you so yse me.

A. I

A. Yo os doy muchas gráciás, por el ofrecimiento, y quedo yo no ménos a vuestro servicio, y por que se va haziendo tarde, nos vamos recogiendo alas posadas que ya es hora.

G. Beso a vuestras mercedes las manos.

D. Yo las de vuestras mercedes.

Diálogo séptimo, entre un sargento y un capo de esquadra, y un Soldado, en el qual se trata de las cosas pertenecientes a la milicia, y de las calidades que deve tener un buen Soldado, con muchos dichos graciosos y buenas quen-

A. I give you many thankes, for your offer, and I remaine no lesse at your service, and because it waxeth late, let vs betake our selues to our lodgings, for it is time.

W. I kiss your hands.

I. And I yours.

The seventh Dialogue betweene a Sergeant of a band, and a corporall, and a Soldier, in which are handled matters pertaining to warfare, and the parts that a good soldier ought to haue, with many fine sayings & good speeches.

Sa. Donde camina señor soldado?

So. A O señor Sargento házia la tabla, si v.m. no manda otra cosa.

Sa. Lleva muchos dineros que jugár?

So. Mi paga enterita como la recebí, que no he ofiado gastar vn real, por no quitar se lo a el jüego.

Sa. Esto es de buenos cofrados, antes falte para el cuerpo que para el jüego.

So. A que feria puedo yo ir, en que mas gane, pues aventuro con quattro ducados ganar quattro-cientos.

* A horse laden with apples passing a river was carried away, and so both lost.

Sa. Y si el dado díz mal, allá ván roscín y mangáns.

So. Señor o rico pijado, o muerto des calabrádo.

Sa. Esta es la quinta de los perdidos.

So. Cuerpo de tal señor, que hijos o mugér tengo yo que mantenir?

Sa. Si pero ne fuera mejor veltir se que jugár el dinero?

So. Yo he hecho mi quenta, y he meneftir camisas, jubón, fayó, calzones, medias, y zapatos, y sombrero, y en quattro ducados, no ay para todo, pues comprár vno nuevo,

Sa. Whither walke you soldier?

So. O sergeant towards the dicing place, if you command no other matter.

Sa. Do you carry with you much money to play?

So. My whole pay as I received it, for I durst not spende one sixe pence thereof, least I should take away so much from play.

Sa. This is the part of good companions, let there be wanting for the body, rather then for play.

So. To what faire may I goe, wherein I may gaine more, seeing I venture with fower duckates, to gaine fower hundred.

Sa. If the die turne ill, there goes horse and apples.

So. Sir, either hangedrich, or dead with head broken.

Sa. This is the reckoning of cast awares.

So. Bodie of me, what children or wife haue I to keepe?

Sa. Tea but were it not better to apparel your selfe, then to play away your money?

So. I haue reckoned with my selfe, I haue neede offirirs, doublet, cassocke, breeches, stockings, shooes, & hat, andin fower ducats there is not for all this, for to buy one shing new

évo, y traer lo otro viejo, no parec bien,quiero jugár, quizá ganare para comprár lo todo.

Sa. Y si los pierde, quedar se ha sin lo uno y lo otro.

So. Señor, prefo por miil, prefo por miil quinientos, todo es estar prefo, diré estoncés desnudo naçí, y desnudo me hallo y desnudo moriré.

Sa. Digame, save quando entramos de guardia?

So. Esta noche le toca a la compañia.

Sa. Con que armas sirve con pica, o arcabuz?

So. Con vn mosquete de siete palmos.

Sa. Pues como díze, que no sacó mas que quattro ducadas tieniendo flete depaga.

So. Vno me defontaron de pólvora y cuerda los contadores, otro le dada a mi camarada parala despensa de esta señana, y otro que se me quitó de los fotoros.

Sa. Julta está la quenta.

So. Es como la de el trillo, cada piedra en su agujero.

Sa. Quantos son de camarada?

So. Tres y con migo quattro.

Sa. Tantos pies tiene vn gato.

So. cinco con el rabo.

Sa. Tienen buen aloxamiento?

So. Tal sea la salud de el aposentador que nos le dió.

Sa. Como no es bueno?

So. Peores vna cahurda de lechóns.

Sa. Tienen huicpeda hermosa?

So. Hermosa señora sargento, yo pienso que los diablos son feratinos en su comparación.

Sa. Bueno es el encarecimiento, que talle tiene?

So. Ella es mas vieja que Metusalen, mas arrugada que vna pásia, mas suiza que vna moléa, mas seca, que vnpalo, diente y muela, como por la mano, la boca su-mida, como ojo de culo, los ojos el vno tuerto, y el otro que no se le facaran con vn garavato finalmente, toda ella es vn retrato

new and weare another old, seemes not well, I will play, peradventure I shall get so much to buy all new.

Sa. If you loose, you must go without one and the other.

So. Sir, arrested for a thousand, taken for a thousand fine hundred, all is but to be arrested, I will then saye I was borne naked, and naked I finde myselfe, and naked shall I die.

Sa. Tell me, do you knowe when we watch?

So. This night it falleth to the compagnie.

Sa. What armes serue you with, a pike or shot?

So. With a musket of seauen handfuls.

Sa. How then fide you, that you had but fower ducats, having seauen for your paie?

So. One ducate defalked for powder and match, the other haue I gien to my comeraude for the charges of this weeke, and the other was taken out for lendings.

* Succesor
lendings which
they give foul-
diers when
there is no paie
and when the
paie comes they
take it off.

Sa. The reckoning is very right.

So. It is even as a threshing floore, euerie stone in his hole.

Sa. How many cabin mates are you togi-
ther?

So. Three, and with me fower.

Sa. Somany feete bath a cat.

So. He bath fwe with the taile.

Sa. Haue all you good lodgynge?

So. I woulde to God such were the health of the Furriel whiche gane it us.

Sa. How so, is it not good good?

So. A pigstie is woorse.

Sa. Haue you a faire Hostesse?

So. Faire master Sergeant, I thinke the diuels are Scrapbines in respect of her.

Sa. You give her good commendations, what handfomnes is in her?

So. She is more olde then Methusalem,

more wrinkled then a dried grape, or

raisin, more fithie then a fli, more

which goeth drie then a stické: teeth and chock, and suckibene-

teeth as in ones hand, the mouth rie filthy wound

funkie in as the hole of the taile, the or carrión.

eyes one quite out, and the other so

funkie into her head that it cannot be

pluckt out with a hooke. In fine, all of her

retrato de la ynbidia.

Sa. Esta tal será vñico remedio contra luxuria.
So. Pues es lo bueno que con todas estas grácias se afeita y repica.
Sa. Y v.m.no le haze clamor.
So. Añor, o que bota a tal, no la acometa vn Tigre.
Sá. Ande, que para vn lava dientes no será mala.
So. Mas me los quiero traer siúos que no mal laválos.
Sa. Mas yo crío, que es como dízen, *quien dize mal de la yéguia, efe la lleva.
So. Par diez, no soy si no como la zorra que quando no pudo alcançar las vbas, dixo vbas de parra, ansi como áili no las avia gana.
Sa. Aqui viene el cávo de esquadra, veámos que nucas trae, de donde viene señor cávo de esquadra?
Ca. De la bandera.
Sa. Queda allí el alférez?
C. No señor, que está en casa de el capitán.
So. A el capitán y alférez déxo yo aóra en casa de el maestre de campo.
Sa. Que nucas ay por allá?
Ca. Nucas ciertas pocas, mentiras y infinitas.
Sa. Que se dice aóra en el cuerpo de guardia?
Ca. Vnos dízen, que nos embarcaremos para corrér la costa, otros que quedaremos aquí de preñido, otros que yrémos a Irlanda, no ay quien lo entienda.
Sa. Todo esto es adivinar, cada uno lo que defia o le elta bien.
Ca. Como decia el otro capitán los soldados son profetas de el diablo.
Sa. Y tenía razón, porque así como el diablo no lave lo por venir, si no que lo conjetura asilházen ellos: y entre mil conjecturas que

ber together is the very picture of Ensie.
Sa. She must needs be the only remedie against lust.
So. But this is the best of her, which with all these good graces is painted out and spoken of.
Sa. And do you not make lone to her?
So. Lone, I swaere by such a one, a Tiger would not set upon her.
Sa. Goe foole she is good enough to wash ones mouth, and spit out againe.
So. I had rather they shoulde bring my cloathes forfe then ill washed.
Sa. But I beleue, it is as they say, he that dispraiseth the mare carrieth her away.
So. By this ten bones I am no otherwise then the foxe, that when he could not reach the grapes, said grape of the vine, so even so that he had no stomach to eat them.
Sa. Here comes the corporall, let vs see what newes bee brings. From whence come you Corporall?
Co. From the colours.
Sa. Is the Ancient there?
C. No sir, he is at the capitaines house.
So. The capitaine and Ensigne I left euens now in the camp-masters house.
Sa. What newes there about?
Co. Certaine newes verie fewe, lies infinite many.
Sa. What say they now upon the guarde?
Co. One saies, we shall embarke our selues to skorre the coast, others that we shall remaine here in garrison, others that we shall goe for Ireland, none can tell what.
Sa. All this is, eny one to geesse at that which hee doth himselfe desire, or likeliest well of.
Co. As another capitaine saide, Souldiers are profets of the diuell.
Sa. And he said well, for as the diuell doth not know, what which is to come, but by coniecture, so do they: & among a thousand conjectures which they make

que házen, alguna han de aclarar.

Ca. Tambien se suena que el rey de Espana, árma para venir contra Inglaterra.
Sa. Venga en óra buena, si trae muchos dineros que dexárnos.
S. Yo con vna cadena de oro que valga cien libras me conténto.
Ca. Pues afee que no las suelen vender muy baratas los Espanioles.
So. Y yo con vna onça de plomo la piénsa comprár.
Ca. Esto es hazer quenta sin la huéspeda: y quíca yréis por lana, y bolveréis tresquilado: que a donde las dan las tóman.
So. Señor, si me matáren, tal dia hizo vn año, tambien murió mi agüelo, ya está olvidado a esto jugámos, oy por mí, mañana porti, no tengo hijos que dexár huérfanos ni padre ni madre, ni perro que me ladre & muera Marta y muera hárta.
Ca. Plegue a dios que quando llegue la ocañón no le calce vnas calças de villa Diego.
Sa. Señor tan buenos hombres ay por los pies como por las manos.
So. Porser mis oficiales, vuéstras mercedes me pueden dezir esto, pero si otro me lo dixerá, matára me con el.
Ca. No dezímos aquí, que lo hará, pero podrá acontecer.
So. Tambien se podrá caer el cielo y nos cogería debaxo.
Sa. Demanéra que tanta dificultad ay en huýr v.m. como en caérse el cielo.
Ca. El de la cama dice este soldado.
So. No soy menor de edad que he mestér curadór, señor cávo de esquadra, yo fabré responder por mi.
Ca. Siempre oy dezir, que vna buena obra se paga con vna mala.

que házen, alguna han de aclarar.
Co. In like sorte, the rumor goeth that the king of Spaine makes preparation to come against England.
Sa. Let him come, if he bring good store of crownes to leue us.
So. I woulde content my selfe with a chaine of golde, that were woorth a hundred pound.
Co. But in faith the Spaniards are not wone to sell them very good cheape.
So. And I hope to buie one with an onnce of lead.
Co. That is to reckon without the Hostesse, and peradventure you will goo for woorl, and returne home sorne, for where men goo there they receive.
So. Sir, if they kill me, that daie made up inft ayere, in like manner died my grandfather, and nowe is forgotten, at this we play, to daie for me, to morrow for thees; I haue no chilidren to leue orphanes, neither father, nor mother, nor dogre that barketh at mee, *let Marta die, *A man ha- get let her die full.
Co. I pray God that when triall shall bee made, that you doe not *put on the beate for too bose of the towne Diégo.
Sa. Sir there are as good men of their feet as of their hands.
So. In that you are my officers, you may say Marta, and muerte killing her she said, dñera much straiking, as of their hands.
Co. As well might *el Ciclo fall, and then *El cielo, the it would catch us under.
Sa. So then it is as hard a matter for you to telle of a bed, run away as for the skie to fall.
Ca. This soldier speakest of *i. Testorne of his bed.
So. I am not in my nonage, that I neede one to care for me, master Corporall I shall know how to answere for my selfe.
Co. I haue alwayes heard, that one good worke is required with an euill.

So. ~~No~~ No sabe v. m. que está vna higa en Róma para el que da consejo a quien no se le pide.

Sa. No se enoje señor soldado que se hará viejo antes de tiempo.

So. ~~No~~ No puede ya ser mas negro el cuervo que sus álas.

Sa. Señor cavo de esquadra, vaya digale a el atañbó que toque a recoger la guardia.

Ca. Yo voy aguarde me aqui v. m.

So. Señor sargento déxeme yr a jugárvn rato antes que se metá la guardia.

Sa. Tanto le pesa ese dinero, que tal priesia tiene por echárllo de si.

So. Yo mas quería doblálo.

So. ~~No~~ Sabe como díz vn refrán, si quieres tener dineros tencllos.

So. De que sirve tener pecos o Casar onáda.

Sa. Vaya con Dios, y pare lo a buen punto.

So. Dios me libre de vinazár.

Sa. ~~Y~~ Y ami de vellácos en quadrilla, y villácos en gavilla, de moça adivina, y de vieja latina, de lodos a el caminár, y de larga enfermedád, de párrafo de legista, de ynfra de canonista, de eçetera de escrivano, y de réçipe de médico, de razón de diz que però y si no, y de senténcia de conque.

* i. Multitudes together.

Ca. Ya toca la caja a recójér.

Sa. Vamos entre tanto a buscá a el Sargento mayór, para que me de el nombre.

Ca. El estará en casa de el general.

Sa. Vamos allá, que todo es camino, es menester que ésta noche aya muy buena guardia.

Ca. Por que ay alguna sospecha?

Sa. Ay nuécas de enemigos, y así es necesario doblar las postas y reforçárlas, y poner dos otras centinelas

So. Do you not know, that there is a floute for him in Rome, that giues counsell to him that requires it not at his hands.

Sa. Be not angrie master soldier, for it will make you old before your time.

So. *The crow cannot be blacker then her feathers.

Sa. Corporall goe and tell the drum that he sound to set the watch.

Co. I goe, and arrie for me here.

So. Sergeant, let me go plain and dice a little before the watch be set.

Sa. So troublesome is his money to him, that he hasteth to throuwe it from him.

So. I woulde rather double it.

So. Do you not knowe what the proverbe saith, if you will haue money keepe it.

So. What good will a little do one? either an Emperour or nothing.

So. Go in Gods name, and rest when you are well.

So. God keepe me from a hazard.

Sa. And me from knaines in my squadro, & clownes in flockes together, from a maid that is a prophete; and an old woman a latinist; from durt in iourneys; and from long sickness; from the paragraffe of the lawyer; from the infir of the Canonist; from the et cetera of the Scribeour; from the recipe of the Physician; from that reason that faith, He saith that, but, if not; and from the sentencie of which.

Co. Now sounds the drum to set the watch.

Sa. In the meane while let us go seeke the Sergeant major, that he may giue me the worde.

Co. He will be at the generals house.

Sa. Let us go thither, for it is all in our maie, it is needfull to night that there be a good guard.

Co. Why, is there any suspicion of anie thing?

Sa. There is newes of the enimie, and therfore needfull to double the set men to watch, & to make them strong, and

centinelas perdidas y que la ronda y contra ronda visiten amenudo.

Ca. Pida v. m. a el sargento mayór, que nos den leña harta, para que aya buena lumbre en el cuerpo de guardia.

Sa. Ansíserá, y todas las armas estarán ~~as~~ muy apunto, que hombre apercévidó, medio combatido.

Ca. Me neñterá dar a los soldados pólvora, cuérdas, y balas.

Sa. Todo se les dará y orden a los coselectos que no les falte piéça.

Ca. Qual es la mejor árma de las que usámos en la guerra?

Sa. La pica es la reyna de las ármas.

Ca. Poco valdrán las pícas, sino se guarden con la arcabuzería, que dána a el enemigo daño.

Sa. Menos valdrá la arcabuzería, si despues de dada la carga, no tuviése adonde repararle de la cavallería enemiga, y de todos los demás que le procuráren dañar.

Ca. Si,peró biea vemos que mayór daño se le haze a el enemigo con la arcabuzería, y mosquetería, que con las picas.

Sa. Todo ésto daño es poco en comparación de el que se recibe a el defbarate de vn esquadrón o exécito, el qual se seguirá luego con la cavallería, si las pícas que es vna muralla fuerte, no se pusiesen ala defensia.

Ca. Por ésto compáran a vn esquadrón bien formado, a el cuerpo vñmáno donde los braços, y piernas, que son los que obran son los arcabuzeros y las pícas que están siempre firmes, y es de dó viene virtud, a todas las partes de el esquadrón, el cuerpo y corazón.

Sa. Así es, y aun si miráis la forma de vn esquadrón de los ordinarios formado, con sus mangas, hallaréis en el, la misma forma de el cuerpo vñmáno.

Ca. Que partes se requiere que tenga vn buen soldado.

Sa. Muchas

and to put two or three * lost cen- * Those that lie
tins, and that the round & coun- close under the
terround may go very thick. enimie to heare
that they saie
and do.

Co. Require of the Sergeant maior, that bee giue vs wodde enough, that there be a good fire upon the body of the garde.

Sa. So it shall be, and all the armes to be very readie, for a man well warred halfe armed.

Co. It will be needfull to giue to the soldiers powder, match, bullets.

Sa. All shall be giuen them, and order for the corflets that they want no piece.

Co. Which is the best weapon, of those we use in warre?

Sa. The pike is the queene of weapons.

Co. Of little availe were pikes, if they were not lined with shot, which barres the enimie a farre off.

Sa. Of lesse availe were the shot, after they had discharged, if they had no place to defend themselves from the enimies horsemen, & all the rest which shoulde endeuor to offend them.

Co. Yet, but we well see, that greater damage is made to the enimie, by small shot and musket, then with pikes.

S. All this damage is little in comparison of that is received at the overthow of a squadron or armie, the which would followe straight with the horse, if the pikes, which is a strong wall, did not put themselves in defence thereof.

C. Hereby they compare a squadron well in order, to a mans bodie, where the armes and legs which are those that worke, as the shot and the pikes which stande alwaies firme, and from whence proceede force to all the parts of the squadron, to the bodie and hart.

S. So it is, and also if you marke well the fashion of a squadron of the ordinary squadrons made with his wings, you shall finde in it the very fashion of a mans bodie.

C. What parts are required in a good soldier?

S. Many

Sa. Muchas, y muchos escribieron de esa materia, pero las mas neceſarias y ordinarias, yo las diré. El soldado, quanto a lo primero, deue ser muy honrōſo, porque soldado sin honra ſería de ningun provecho, pues ella es la eſpuela que le ha de hazer obrar lo, que no báſtan premios, ni ruégos, ni amenazas de tus oficiales.

Ca. Por eſto, deve el soldado traer, ſiempre escrita en la freſte aquella eſpuela que dice, por la honra pon la vida, y pon las dos, honra y vida por tu Dios.

S. Lo ſegundo deve ſer el soldado valiente no temeroso ni covarde.

C. El soldado covarde mas propiamente ſe podría llamar el pánſo, al qual quando los páxaros le pierden una vez el miedo, ſe aſiſtan ençima de el, o como el Rey de las ráñas.

S. Como es eſto de el Rey de las ráñas?

C. Dizen, que en tiempo de mari caſtana, las ráñas deſlearon tener Rey como todas las demás naſciones, y pidieron a Iupiter que era Rey de los dióces que les diéſe Rey el qual viendo ſu neceſidad quiso burlar de ellas, y dixo les que para un dia ſeñalado les daría Rey, ellas le esperávan con grande alegría, y venido aquel dia, ſalieron todas, de ſus casas, muy compuestas, como convenía para recibir a ſu rey y puiéronſe en la ſuperficie de el agua eſperando; en este tiempo Iupiter arrojó deſde el cielo, un gran madero, que dió con el, en la laguna donde, ellas eſtábā, tan grā golpe, y hizó tan gran ruido que ellas fueron todas turbadas, y aſombradas, y unas por aquí, y otras por allí, cada una huyó a ſu casa, ſin oſar llegar, a hazer a ſu rey el devido acatamiento, ni ſalir fuera en muchos días quedó ſe el madero nadando ençima de el agua, y ellas con tanto temor

S. Many, and many haue written of this matter, but the most neceſſarie & ordinarie I will tell you. The ſoldier touching the firſt point, ought to be honorable, for a ſoldier without honor would profit little, because it is the spur which drives him on to effect that, which rewards are not ſufficient to doe, nor inreaties, nor threatnings of his officers.

C. Therefore the ſoldier ſhould carrie alwaies written in his forehead this verſe, which ſaith, For thy honor hazard thy life, and hazard them both, honor and life for thy God.

Sa. The ſecond, the ſoldier ought to be valiant, and not fearful nor covarde.

Co. A cowardly ſoldier may better be called, a thing made to feare amay crones, that when the birdes doe once caſt off their feare of the ſame, they ſit on the top of it, or as the king of frogs.

Sa. How is that of the king of frogs?

Co. They ſay, in old time, when beaſtes could ſpeak, the frogs deſired to haue a king, as other naſcions had, and they requeſted Iupiter, which was king of the Gods, that he would give them a king, which ſeeing their ſimplicitie, would neeſt mock them a little, and told them that by a day appointed, he would give them a king: they waited for it, with great ioy, and the day being come, all of them caue forth out of their houſes, well attired, as may ſit for the receiuing of a king, and put themſelues upon the upper part of the water waiting: then Iupiter caſteth downe from heauen a great blocke, which lighted in the lake where they were: it gaue ſuch a blow, and made ſuch a noife, that they were all troubled, & amafed; ſome this way, others that way, every one ranne home to his houſe without daring to come neare, to make their due reverencie to their king, nor to come forth a doores in many daies. The beame remai- ned

mór de vér coſa tan grande, que ninguna oſáva ſalir fuera de ſu caſa, y allí morian de hambre, hasta que poco a poco fue ſaliendo la mas eſforçada, y ſiguiendo la las demas, cada dia yvan perdiéndo mas el temor, y ſe yvan lle- gando cerca de ſu rey, viendo le a el tan manio y que no ſe movía, ni les dezia mala paſabra, al fin tanto continuaron y (como la mucha conveſación es cauſa de menolpicio) ſe llegaron a ſu rey y viendo todas lo que era, ſaltaron ençima de el, y començaron a cheriar y dar grandes riſadas, haziendo burla de ſu Rey, y de ſu temor paſlido bolviéron pueſas, a yniſſir a Iupiter que en todo caſo le diſeſe Rey no tan manio, ſi no que fuéſe juſticio, Iupiter viendo ſu nečia porfió les ymbió por Rey a la cigüeña, la qual rýna hasta oy entre ellas, cebando ſe y comiendoſas cada dia en pena de ſu loca petiſión, pues pudiendo bivir libres quifieron mas hazer ſe eſclavas y mas vn Rey crueſl, que manio y benigno.

Sa. No ha eſtado malo el quento, y mejor es la moralidad.

Ca. Deximos eſto aóra, y proſiga v.m. adelante con ſu plática de el buen ſoldado.

Sa. Lo tercero que ha de tener ha de ser gran ſuſfridor de travájos, y para ello deve ſer de reza complexion.

Ca. Ya el que eſto no tuviere, el diablo ſe le trujo a la guerra, como dízen de el moço vergoncizo, que el diablo le trajo a palacio.

Sa. Deve tanbien ſer muy obediēnte a ſus oficiales, y que haga de buena gana y ſin moſtrar mal Roſtro lo que le ordenáren ſiendo de el ſervicio de la Reyna.

Ca. Quiten le a la milicia la obediē- cia

ned there ſwimming upon the water, & they with ſueſ faſe, to ſee a thing ſo great, that none of them durſt once go out of his dores, & therin they died with hunger, untill that by little and little, the moſt hardieſt of them went out, and the reſt following, every day they went more & more, looſing their fear, & they went neare to their king ſeeing him ſo gentle, and that he moſued not, nor ſaid neuer an ill word to them, in the end they cotinued ſo long, and (as much familiaritie oftentimes breeds contempt) they approched to their king, & ſeeing all of ibē what he was, they leaped upon him, & they began to crook & to break out into greaſ laughter, making a reſt of their king, and of their own paſſed feare: they returned afterward to impotune Iupiter, that by al meaneſ he woulde giue them a king, but not ſo ſtill and quiet, but that he ſhould be a iuſticer; Iupiter ſeeing their fooliſh impotunite, ſent the ſtork to them for a king, the which raigneth til this day among the, farting himſelfe, and eating them up every day, as a puniſhment for their forte request, when they might haue lived at libertie they woulde make themſelues ſlaves, and rather ſet up a crueſl king, then a benign and gentle.

Sa. The tale hath not beeſ ill, yet better is the morall thereof.

Co. Let us leaue this, and goe forward with your ſpeech of the good ſoldier.

Sa. The thirdb that he is to haue, is to be a great evader of travájos, and for this he ſhould be of a ſtrong complexion.

Co. And be that hath not this, the Diuell brought him to the warre, as it is ſaid he brought the bluſfaced yong man to the court.

Sa. He ought alſo to be very obediēnt to his officers, and that he perorme that obediēnce with a good will, & with out ſhewing an ill countenance to that they ſhall ordaine, being for the Queenes ſervice.

Co. Let them take away obediēnce in ſoldiers

gia en los soldados, y bolver se ha en confusión Babilónica.

Sa. Otras muchas particularidades, ha de tener el buen soldado, que yo no quiero tratá aora, quien las qui liere ver, lea quatro o cinco tratados que andan de ello en lengua Elpañola vno de el capitán *Martin de Eguiluz* y otro de *Escalante* otro de don *Fernando de Cordua*, y otro de don *Bernardino de Mendoza*, que allí lo verá bien pintado.

Ca. A qui buelve nuestro mosquetero muy cabizbajo viche, perdido deve de avér.

Sa. A señór soldado vna palabra.

So. Dexe me v.m. señór Sarjento, basta me ini mala ventura.

Sa. Que ha sido, perdióse toda el armada?

So. No topára yo aqui aóra con el veláculo que este juego ynventó.

Sa. Que le quería dezir?

So. Reniego del diablo, sino le avía de hazér mas tajadas que púntos se han echado en los dados des pues que ellos ynventó.

Sa. Esto me parece echára la culpa de el año a la aluárda quien le mandó a v.m. jugár.

So. El Diablo que no duerme, y anda tras hazérme desesperar para llevármme.

Sa. Pues mire no le crea, sino quando venga, diga le que por aora no puede yér, que está ocupado en servicio de su magestad, que se buelva otro dia, y si no quisié deshagale la horquilla en la cabéga.

So. Muy bueno va esto, estó y yo rabiéndoy esta se v.m. burlando de mi.

Sa. Mire, yo le daré un buen remedio tomo dos onças de jaráve de paciencia, y quattro de unguento de olíudio y bevalo todo, y con ello purgará ésta malenconía y quedará luego bueno.

So. Serán dos purgas una tras otra despues

ders in war, and it will turne to a Babylonian confusion.

Sa. *The good soldier is to haue many other particulars, which I will not nowe handle, who soever will see them, let him reade fower or five treatises, which handle it in the Spanish tong, one of captaine Martin Eguiluz, another of Escalante, another of Don Fernando de Cordua, and another of Don Bernardino de Mendoza, there may it bee seene well set out.*

Co. *Here comes backe againe our musketier, he comes hanging downe his head, it is likely he hath lost.*

Sa. *Ho Soldier a word with you.*

So. *Let me alone Sergeant, it is enough that I haue ill lucke.*

Sa. *What hath happened, is all the fleete lost?*

So. *I would not meete now with that vilaine that inuentioned this play.*

Sa. *What would you say to him?*

So. *I renounce the deuell if I woulde not geue him more flashes then hath set prickes on dice, since he inuentioned them.*

Sa. *This seemes to me, to put the fault of the asse on the packe saddle. Who commanded you to play?*

So. *The diuell which sleepes not, and folloves after me to drine me into despaire, that he mighte carrie me away.*

Sa. *Then marke what I say, do not beleue him, but when he commeth to tell him, that for this time you cannot goe, that you are employed in her Majesties seruice, that he come another day, and if he will not, clip your musket stiffe on his pate.*

So. *This goes well, I stand raging, and you mocking.*

Sa. *Behold, I will give you a good remedie, Take two onces of the srrupe of patience, and fower onces of the oile of forgetfulness, and drinke it off, and with this you shall purge this melancholy, and soorth with you shall be well.*

So. *That will be two purges one after another*

pues de purgada la bolsa purgar el cuérpo.

Sa. Pues nunca ha oydo dezir, que un clavo saca otro, y una mano lava otra y entrambas la cara.

Ca. Pues como se dió tan presto fin ala triste tragedia.

So. Yo les diré a vuestras mercedes como fue, el me dió a pará a onze, paré le quattro reales, echóme un enquentro, y tiromelos.

Sa. Mal principio.

So. Antes suelen dezir, que es buen pronóstico perder la primer a mano.

Ca. No ay regla tan general que no tenga eccepción.

So. Dióme a parar luego a doze, que es mi fuerte, paréle ocho reales, echó un azár, díxe repárolas, o torgó me el repáro, lancó el dado, y echó otro azár.

Sa. Pues pecadór, para que queríades mas de avér ganado con quarenta otros quarenta, que mercadér ay que gane a ciento por cien-

to?

So. Señor, yo no me contenté sino quise arrancar las clavos de la mesa como dízen, y díxe siete y llevar, díxo me, digole, Relanza y echá su fuerza, y arrebuja cō todo *¶* ami dexóme del agalla, sin blanca como el diablo se aparecio a san Benito.

Ca. *¶* Siempre lo verá, que quien todo lo quiere todo lo pierde.

So. *¶* Mas siempre despues de ydo el consejo viene el consejo.

Sa. Aóra bien quien érra y se enmiénda a Dios se encomienda.

So. La enmiénda será empeñar el capotillo, para bolvérme a esquitá si puedo.

Sa. Esta no será enmiénda sino obstinación.

So. *¶* Aquí perdí vna aguja, aqui la tengo de hallár.

Sa. No veis pecadór que se os cayó en la mar esta aguja, como la que reis hallár?

So. Yo

other, after the purse is purged to purge the bodie.

Sa. *Hau you never heard, that one naile driveth one another, one hand washeth another, and both of them the face.*

Co. *But how made you such a quicke ende of the sad tragedie?*

So. *I will tell you how it was, he chaunced me aelenen, I set him two shillings, he cast and drew them.*

Sa. *An ill beginning.*

So. *Rather they are woont to say, it is a good signe to loose the first hand.*

Co. *There is norule so generall which hath not some exception.*

So. *He chance me forlith with twelue which is my chance, I set him fower shillings, he cast a hazard, I said I set againe, he allowes of it, he thorwes the dice, & casts another hazard.*

Sa. *Why wretched siner, what mould you more then to gaine with forte other fortie, what merchant is there which doth gaine a hundred for a hundred?*

So. *I was not content but would pull in pecces the nailes of the table as they say, and I said I set seuenten times so much as he drew, he said content, I said content. He thorwes againe the dice, & he drew up al, and so he left me hanging on the gill, with out a farthing, as the diuell appeared to Saint Benit.*

Co. *You shall alwayes see, be that all content, all loofeth.*

So. *But after the steede stollen, shut the stable doore.*

Sa. *Now he that erres and amends, to God himselfe commends.*

So. *The mends wil be to payne the cassock, to go again to quitt my selfe if I can.*

Sa. *This will not be an amends but obstinacie.*

So. *Heere lost I a needle, and beere hope I to finde it againe.*

Sa. *Do you not see, that this needle fell into the sea, how will you now finde it?*

So. I

So. Yo me tengo de yr a vna hechizera, que me de vna foga de ahorcado, que dízen que es buena para hazer ganar.
 Ca. Castiga me mi madre y yo trómboleas.
 Sa. A ora señór vamos por aóra a meter la guárdia, que despues se tratará de ello.
 Ca. Vaya a llamar sus camaradas.
 So. Yo voy, béo a vuéstras merçedes las manos.
 Ca. Yo tambien quiero yr por mis armas.
 Sa. Yo me voy a la vandera, alli esperaré.

So. *I am to go to a witch that she may giue me a rope of a hanged man, which they say is good to make one winne.*
 Co. *My mother doth chastise me, and I mocke and mette at it.*
 Sa. *Now sir, let us go euernow to set the match, for afterwards we will talke beeroof.*
 Co. *Go and call your Cameradoes.*
 So. *I go, I take my leaues of you.*
 Co. *I will also go for my armes.*
 Sa. *I goe to the colours, there will I starre.*

F I N I S.

